





# **The Complete Anti-Federalist**





# The Complete Anti-Federalist

---

*Edited, with Commentary and Notes, by*  
**Herbert J. Storing**

*With the Assistance of Murray Dry*

**VOLUME 7**

**Index**

*Prepared by John Robinson*

The University of Chicago Press  
*Chicago and London*

The University of Chicago Press, Chicago 60637  
The University of Chicago Press, Ltd., London

©1981 by The University of Chicago  
All rights reserved. Published 1981  
Printed in the United States of America

*Library of Congress Cataloging in Publication Data*  
Main entry under title:

The Complete Anti-Federalist

Includes bibliographical references.

Contents: v. 1. What the Anti-Federalists were for—v. 2.  
Objections of non-signers of the Constitution and Major series  
of essays at the outset—v. 3. Pennsylvania—[etc.]

I. United States—Constitutional law—Collected works.

I. Storing, Herbert J., 1928–77. II. Dry, Murray.

KF4515.C65                      342.73'029      81-10287

ISBN 0-226-77573-9 (set)      347.30229      AACR2

## *Contents of Other Volumes*

### VOLUME ONE

Foreword by Joseph Cropsey  
Preface by Murray Dry  
Prefatory Notes by Herbert J. Storing

#### **What the Anti-Federalists Were *For***

- 1 Introduction
- 2 Conservatives
- 3 The Small Republic
- 4 Union
- 5 The Federalist Reply
- 6 The Aristocratic Tendency of the Constitution
- 7 Complex Government
- 8 Bill of Rights
- 9 Conclusion

The Articles of Confederation, Keyed to the Principal Anti-Federalist Discussions

The Constitution of the United States, Keyed to the Principal Anti-Federalist Discussions

### VOLUME TWO

#### PART I

#### **Objections of Non-Signers of the Constitution**

- 2.1 Elbridge Gerry (3 November 1787)
- 2.2 George Mason (1787)
- 2.3 Robert Yates and John Lansing (14 January 1788)
- 2.4 Luther Martin (1788)
- 2.5 Edmund Randolph (10 October 1787)

## Contents of Other Volumes

### PART 2

#### Major Series of Essays at the Outset

- 2.6 Cato (September 1787–January 1788)
- 2.7 Centinel (October 1787–April 1788)
- 2.8 The Federal Farmer (1787 and 1788)
- 2.9 Brutus (October 1787–April 1788)

### VOLUME THREE

#### Pennsylvania

- 3.1 William Findley (28 September 1787)
- 3.2 Minority of the Pennsylvania House of Representatives  
(4 October 1787)
- 3.3 An Old Whig (October 1787–February 1788)
- 3.4 Montezuma (17 October 1787)
- 3.5 A Democratic Federalist (17 October 1787)
- 3.6 A Federal Republican (1787)
- 3.7 John Humble (29 October 1787)
- 3.8 An Officer of the Late Continental Army (6 November 1787)
- 3.9 Philadelphiensis (November 1787–April 1788)
- 3.10 Alfred (13 December 1787)
- 3.11 Minority of the Convention of Pennsylvania (18 December  
1787)
- 3.12 William Penn (January 1788)
- 3.13 Deliberator (20 February 1788)
- 3.14 A Farmer (April 1788)
- 3.15 None of the Well-Born Conspirators (23 April 1788)
- 3.16 Aristocrotis (1788)

### VOLUME FOUR

#### Massachusetts and New England

- 4.1 Anon., “A confederation” (9 October 1787)
- 4.2 A Gentleman in a Neighbouring State (October 1787)
- 4.3 John DeWitt (October–December 1787)
- 4.4 Vox Populi (October–November 1787)
- 4.5 William Symmes (15 November 1787)
- 4.6 Agrippa (November 1787–February 1788)
- 4.7 A Federalist (26 November 1787)
- 4.8 One of the Common People (3 December 1787)



## Contents of Other Volumes

- 4.9 Candidus (December 1787–January 1788)
- 4.10 Cornelius (December 1787)
- 4.11 Poplicola (24 December 1787)
- 4.12 Helvidius Priscus (December 1787–February 1788)
- 4.13 A Republican Federalist (December 1787–February 1788)
- 4.14 Samuel (10 January 1788)
- 4.15 Hampden (January–February 1788)
- 4.16 A Customer (March 1788)
- 4.17 A Farmer (January–June 1788)
- 4.18 Charles Turner (17 January and 6 February 1788)
- 4.19 The Yeomanry of Massachusetts (25 January 1788)
- 4.20 An American (28 January 1788)
- 4.21 A Bostonian (4 February 1788)
- 4.22 A Watchman (February 1788)
- 4.23 A Friend to the Rights of the People, A Friend to the Republic  
(February 1788)
- 4.24 David (7 March 1788)
- 4.25 A Newport Man (March 1788)
- 4.26 Consider Arms, Malichi Maynard, and Samuel Field (April  
1788)
- 4.27 Phileleutheros (May 1788)
- 4.28 A Columbian Patriot (1788)

## VOLUME FIVE

### PART I

#### Maryland

- 5.1 A Farmer (February–April 1788)
- 5.2 A Farmer and Planter (April 1788)
- 5.3 Samuel Chase (April 1788)
- 5.4 Minority of the Maryland Ratifying Convention (May 1788)
- 5.5 John Francis Mercer (April or May 1788)

### PART 2

#### Virginia and the South

- 5.6 Richard Henry Lee (16 October 1787)
- 5.7 Cato Uticensis (17 October 1787)
- 5.8 A Proposal for Reviving Christian Conviction (October 1787)
- 5.9 A Georgian (15 November 1787)
- 5.10 Cato (November–December 1787)
- 5.11 Tamony (9 January 1788)

## Contents of Other Volumes

- 5.12 Rawlins Lowndes (January 1788)
- 5.13 Republicus (February and March 1788)
- 5.14 The Impartial Examiner (February–June 1788)
- 5.15 Brutus (14 May 1788)
- 5.16 Patrick Henry (June 1788)
- 5.17 George Mason (4 June 1788)
- 5.18 Denatus (11 June 1788)
- 5.19 A Delegate Who Has Caught Cold (June 1788)
- 5.20 Sentiments of Many (18 June 1788)
- 5.21 James Monroe (1788)

## VOLUME SIX

### PART I

#### New York

- 6.1 Cincinnatus (November–December 1787)
- 6.2 A Son of Liberty (8 November 1787)
- 6.3 Brutus, Jr. (8 November 1787)
- 6.4 An Observer (19 November 1787)
- 6.5 A Citizen (24 November 1787)
- 6.6 A Countryman from Dutchess County (November 1787–February 1788)
- 6.7 A Countryman (December 1787–January 1788)
- 6.8 Sidney (February–March 1788)
- 6.9 Sydney (June 1788)
- 6.10 Albany Antifederal Committee (26 April 1788)
- 6.11 A Plebeian (1788)
- 6.12 Melancton Smith (June 1788)
- 6.13 George Clinton (June–July 1788)

### PART 2

#### Conclusion

- 6.14 Mercy Warren (1805)

# Index





# Index

References to the Anti-Federalist writings are by paragraph number. The first number denotes the volume, the second the position of the essay or series within that volume, and the third the paragraph. The abbreviation “intro.” is used for Herbert J. Storing’s introductions to volumes or parts of volumes as well as his introductions to individual writings. References to volume 1 are by volume and page number. Notes to the Anti-Federalist writings are referred to by volume, selection, and note number; notes to the introductions by volume, selection, “intro.,” and note number; and notes to volume 1 by volume, page, and note number. An italicized number at the beginning of an index entry denotes a complete writing by (rather than a reference to) the Anti-Federalist under whose name that entry appears; see Contents of Other Volumes, pp. v–viii above.

- Abraham, 4.6.68
- absentees, British, 4.6.42
- academies, 5.18.9
- accident, in formation of government, 4.12.1
- accountability of public officials, 2.9.20, 2.9.197
- accounts, public, 4.2.7
- accused
  - confrontation of witnesses by, 2.8.200, 2.9.27, 5.14.10
  - rights of, 2.8.86
- Achaean League, 4.12.5
- Actaeon, fable of, 6.6.46
- Adair, Douglass, 1.5n49
- Adams, Charles Francis, 2.4n9
- Adams, John, 3.7.1, 4.9.15, 6.12.22
  - ambassador to Great Britain, 4.2.4
  - on balanced government, 1.55–56, 2.7 intro., 2.7.6–7, 2.7.10
  - on bicameral legislature, 2.4.38
  - on class favoritism, 2.8.54
  - on constitution of Senate, 5.12.4
  - Countryman on, 6.6.52
  - Defence of the Constitutions of Government of the United States*, 2.4n9, 6.14.108
  - on House of Representatives, 4.3.14
  - inconsistency of, 4.26.15
  - influence of, on federal convention, 1.95n15
  - and Mercy Warren, 6.14n17
  - Mercy Warren on administration of, 6.4.105–10
  - on natural aristocracy, 2.8n64
  - on passions, 4.6.73
  - private virtues of, 6.14.110
  - pro-British sentiments of, 6.14.106
  - on San Marino, 1.45
  - on sources of inequality, 1.57
  - on superiority of Boston, 4.6n19
  - on universities, 2.8n65
- Adams, John Quincy, 1.83n44

## Index

- Adams, Samuel  
 at Massachusetts convention, vol. 4 intro.  
 opponent of John Hancock, 4.13 intro.  
 possible author of Candidus essays, 4.9 intro.  
 possible author of Helvidius Priscus essays, 4.12 intro.
- Addison, Joseph  
 on efforts to reduce influence of Parliament, 6.8.7–10  
 quoted by Patrick Henry, 5.16.8  
 on republic of Lucca, 4.25.4, 4.25n4
- Address to the People of the State of New York, on the Subject of the New Constitution* (John Jay), 6.11.28–33
- Address and Reasons of Dissent of the Minority of the Convention of Pennsylvania*, 3.11. *See also* Pennsylvania Convention Minority
- Adelos, 4.26n3
- administration, Federalist emphasis on, 1.41–42, 1.51, 4.11.1
- administration, good  
 as cure for defects in government organization, 2.7.101  
 representation more important than, 2.9.45
- admirals, 2.8.176
- admiralty courts, 2.7n20
- admiralty jurisdiction, 3.2.7, 5.9.3
- Aesop, 3.3.51
- affection, of people for government, 2.9.18
- affections, popular, divorce of, from popular interest, 3.6.21
- Africans  
 comparison of, to Indians, 5.13.14  
 enslavement of, 4.26.8  
 importation of, 4.2.9  
 resistance to enslavement by, 4.26.15  
 vindication of the injured rights of, 4.27.3  
*See also* slaves
- age requirements  
 for Congress, 4.22.4  
 for presidency, 2.8.179
- agrarian laws, 5.1.30
- Agricola, P. Valerius, 1.88n27
- agriculture  
 in ancient Greece and Rome, 4.6.6  
 promotion of, 4.9.9  
 and trade, 1.45–46
- Agrippa (pseud.), 4.6; 1.11–12, 3.10n3, 4.6n13  
 attitude of, toward commerce, 1.87n6  
 on bill of rights, 1.40  
 on immigration policy, 1.19–20  
 on minority rights, 1.68  
 reasons of, for using pseudonym, 4.6.44  
 rejection of consolidation by, 1.24–25  
 resolution proposed by, 4.6.41–42, 4.6.55–56  
 summary of essays of, 4.6 intro.
- Agrippa (biblical character), 6.11.1
- aid, voluntary, from states to federal government, 3.3.38
- Alba (Alva), Duke of, 5.1.47
- Albany Antifederal Committee, 6.10
- Albany Gazette*, 6.8
- ale, taxation of, 2.9.73
- Alexander VI (pope), 5.1.107
- Alexander the Great, 4.6.68, 5.1.75
- Alfred (pseud.), 3.10
- Alfredus (pseud.), 1.64, 3.3n17  
 identification of, 4.17 intro. n1  
 [New Hampshire] Farmer's reply to, 4.17.12–25  
 on trial by jury, 4.17.16
- Algerians (Algerines)  
 American disputes with, 6.11.30  
 American slavers compared to, 4.2.9
- allegiance  
 basis of, 3.9.80  
 subversion of, 4.10.5
- alliances, among states, 2.4.45, 3.13.3
- alliances, foreign, 3.16.10  
 and partial confederacies, 2.5.29  
 possibility of a state concluding, 2.5.18
- allies, loans from, 2.7.79
- ambassadors  
 appointment of, 2.2.4, 2.8.170  
 necessity of, 2.8.169
- ambassadors, foreign  
 cases involving, 2.9.160, 2.9.183,

## Index

- ambassadors (*continued*)  
4.8.1  
exemptions and privileges of, 2.9.168–69  
life style of, 4.10.9  
relations of, with Senate, 3.11.43  
support of, by federal government, 2.9.63  
Supreme Court and, 2.9.168, 4.6.42, 4.9.22
- ambiguities, in federal Constitution, 2.5.41
- ambition, 2.4 intro. n9  
human tendency toward, 3.12.13  
of large states, 2.4.31  
opinions of great men dictated by, 2.7.140  
presidential, 2.6.25  
projects of, 4.28.3  
voice of aristocracy, 6.12.21
- ambitious men, Constitution's failure to guard against, 5.11.2
- Ambrose, Saint, 5.1.106
- amendment, constitutional  
Countryman on, 6.7.8  
desirability of, before ratification, 2.1.7, 2.5.36, 4.6.74, 5.3.17  
difficulty of, under proposed constitution, 3.3.2–3, 3.3.55, 4.13.19  
federal government's ability to prevent, 5.16.27  
Hampden on, 4.15.2, 4.15.5–7  
in Massachusetts, 4.13.14  
opportunity for, 2.6.3  
in Pennsylvania, 2.7.70n, 3.11.12  
Plebeian on, 6.11.3–4, 6.11.12–17, 6.11.20, 6.11.27  
on proportion of representatives to population, 6.12.10  
state legislatures excluded from, 2.5.36  
Virginia Plan, 2.4.16  
*See also* Articles of Confederation, amendment of
- amendment, governmental, 5.14.43
- amendment procedure  
inadequacy of, 2.5.37, 2.7.56, 2.8.58  
intricacy of, 3.3.50, 3.3.55
- amendments, 1.53, 2.8.229, 6.14.164  
agreement among states on, 2.8.63, 3.3.45
- Albany Antifederal Committee  
on, 6.10.15–17  
communication of, to Congress, by state conventions, 3.3.46  
Congress not empowered to consider, 4.21.1  
desire of Massachusetts and Virginia for, 4.6.12  
disagreements on, in Virginia, 5.6.4  
Federalist agreement to, 6.11.1  
George Clinton on, 6.13.27  
George Mason on, 5.17.2  
indefiniteness of, 4.13.19  
ineffectiveness of, 5.19.3–4  
judicious application of, 5.14.1  
limitations proposed on, 5.16.2  
at Maryland Convention, 5.4.4–13  
Mercy Warren on, 6.14.45, 6.14.49–51  
necessity of, to preserve the states, 2.9.64, 2.9.194  
Patrick Henry on, 5.16.2  
people's right to propose, 3.3.44, 5.3.3  
post-ratification, 3.9.92, 4.13.13  
proposal of: by Citizen, 6.5.4; by Congress, 5.16.2; by Agrippa, 4.6.74–75; by Hampden, 4.15.4; by Massachusetts convention, 2.7.166, 3.14.22, 3.16.19, 4 intro., 4.28.5; by president, 3.9.79  
ratification of, 4.14.6  
state conventions barred from making, 3.3.2  
tendency of, to multiply, 4.15.6  
timing of, 3.3.50, 5.5.4  
use of, as ploy by Federalists, 2.8.71  
vote on, in Maryland, 5.4.10
- amendments, conditional, 5.1.60, 5.5.4
- amendments, essential, 6.6.42–44
- amendments, recommendatory, 1.36, 4.5 intro., vol. 5 intro., vol. 6 intro.
- America* (Noah Webster), 3.3n17
- America*  
aristocracy of, 5.1.28  
asylum of the poor and oppressed, 3.9.37  
British policy in, 4.11.4

- America (*continued*)  
 condition of, compared to other nations, 4.9.5, 6.8.18, 6.14.120  
 economic development of, 4.6.37  
 future development of, 6.14.179  
 happy isolation of, 4.28.6  
 immaturity of, 4.28.12  
 last home of liberty, 2.8.107  
 natural wealth of, 3.10.2–3, 6.14.177–78  
 progress of, 2.7.118  
 protection of, by geography, 4.3.29  
 remedy for the ills of, 1.82n34, 3.9.71  
 unique history of, 4.3.1  
 American (pseud.), 4.20  
 American Citizen (Tench Coxe), 2.6n19  
 on congressional control over elections, 3.6.16  
 and Countryman, 6.6n7  
 criticism of, by Officer of the Late Continental Army, 3.8.7  
 on presidential powers, 3.9.96  
 American citizenship, rights of, 2.5.18  
 American experiment, 4.28n17  
*American Herald* (Boston), 4.3, 4.20, 4.21  
 American people  
 ability of, to awe their rulers, 2.8.127  
 ambitions of, for their country, 3.9.26  
 belief of, in their own wisdom, 5.1.19  
 and bills of rights, 5.6.5  
 defense of liberty by, 1.72–73, 4.28.2  
 degradation of, after independence, 6.14.126–27  
 desire of, for expansion, 6.14.87–89  
 distinguished by their government, 5.1.102  
 expectations of, from their rulers, 6.14.8–9  
 freedom of, from European prejudices, 6.14.162  
 genius and habits of, 2.4.44  
 innocence and inexperience of, 6.14.116–17, 6.14.129–30  
 negative attitudes of, toward their own country, 4.3.1  
 pioneer experience of, 6.14.2  
 political character of, 6.14.67–68  
 political knowledge of, 3.12.9  
 propensity of, to imitate foreigners, 6.14.127  
 restlessness and inconsistency of, 5.14.1  
 security of, in possession of their rights, 4.6.71  
 sense of freedom of, 2.8.74  
 strong and manly habits of, 2.8.59  
 susceptibility of, to despotism, 5.1.31  
 virtue of, 4.3.17, 5.1.102, 5.21.3  
 will of, to resist tyranny, 2.6.34  
 American Revolution, 4.13.13  
 Aristocrotis on, 3.16.16n  
 evidence of national greatness, 2.6.3  
 example of, to American youth, 4.12.2  
 influence of, on attitudes toward government, 1.71  
 lessons of, forgotten, 3.3.17  
 Massachusetts' record in, 3.9.78, 4.12.7  
 Mercy Warren on, 6.14.133, 170  
 old habits destroyed by, 2.7.4  
 principles of, 1.8, 2.4.96, 3.3.3  
*See also* revolution principles; Revolutionary War  
 Ames, Fisher, 1.11, 1.13  
 amity, treaty of, among the states, 4.9.22  
 Ammianus Marcellinus, 5.1.104, 106  
 amnesty, general, 3.9.98  
 Amphictyonic Council, 2.4.30, 2.8.205, 5.21.17  
 precedent for proposed government, 4.12.1  
 resemblance of, to federal republic, 4.12n6  
 anarchy, 2.1.5, 2.2n7  
 alternative to efficient government, 2.7n74  
 alternative to proposed government, 4.20.3  
 danger of, denied by Brutus, Jr., 6.3.9  
 danger of, urged by Federalists, 3.9.70



## Index

- anarchy (*continued*)
  - evils of, 2.7.139
  - fear of, exploited by Federalists, 3.16.17
  - fear of, not realistic, 2.7.141
  - Federalist fear of, 6.7.8
  - possible result of rejecting Constitution, 2.7.140, 4.9.4
  - preferability of, to despotism, 2.7 intro.
  - transition from, to tyranny, 5.7.4
- Anglo-Saxons. *See* Saxons
- Annapolis convention, 1.9–10, 2.8.7, 5.7.4, 6.14.38
- Anne, Queen, letter of, to Scottish Parliament, 6.4.1
- Anne Arundel County, Maryland, 5.1n1, 5.2n1, 5.2.2
- Anon., *A Confederation . . .*, 4.1
- anonymity, of Centinel, 2.7 intro.
- anonymous publications, 2.4.5. *See also* pseudonymous publications
- Anti-Cincinnatus (pseud.), 6.1 intro. n4
- Anti-Federalism, 4.9.21
- Anti-Federalist (name)
  - appropriateness of, 22.8.72
  - Candidus' rejection of, 4.9.41
  - Countryman on inaccuracy of, 6.7.4
  - Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.25–26
  - Luther Martin on, 2.4.43
  - Melancton Smith on, 6.12.5
  - origins of, 1.9–10
  - preferred form of, 1.79n6
  - Sidney on, 6.8.3
  - as term of opprobrium, 4.3.25
- Anti-Federalist authors
  - exposure of, to retaliation, 3.9.54
  - use of pseudonyms by, 3.9.2
- Anti-Federalists, 2.4.26–27
  - alleged attempts of, to alarm the people, 2.9.111
  - alleged faintheartedness of, 1.6
  - amendments suggested by, 6.14.50
  - Aristides' attack on, 5.1n3
  - attitude of, toward slavery, 1.9n20
  - belief of, in federalism, 2.4n36, 5.14.26
  - boycott of Pennsylvania Assembly by, 3.2 intro., 3.2.3
  - Centinel's characterization of, 2.7.93
  - characterized as placemen and pensioners, 4.19.1
  - concern of, for the Union, 5.16n18
  - conservatism of, 1.7, 1.8, 1.22, 1.59
  - consistency of, 6.11.27
  - county organization of, urged, 2.7.160
  - description of, vol. 6 intro.
  - desire of, to conceal their names, 3.9n1
  - emphasis of, on America's security, 1.27
  - exclusion of, from Federal Convention, 2.7.166
  - Federalist attempts to discredit, 3.16.17
  - James Wilson on motives of, 6.1.49
  - John DeWitt on, 4.3.10
  - lack of agreement among, 1.5
  - liberalism of, 1.83n7
  - in Maryland, vol. 5 intro.
  - in Massachusetts, 3.3.27, vol. 4 intro., 4.26.16
  - Mercy Warren on, 6.14.44
  - mistaken judgment of Federal Convention, 3.2n1
  - numerical strength of, 3.9.42, 5.16.8
  - objections of, to the Constitution, 6.14.46–47, 6.14.49
  - in Pennsylvania, 3.2.3, 3.11.7, vol. 4 intro.
  - and Pennsylvania Constitutionalists, vol. 3 intro.
  - points of agreement with Federalists, 1.5
  - reassessment of, 1.3–4
  - and revolutionary Patriots, 3.9.57
  - role of, in founding process, 1.3
  - self-interested motives attributed to, 4.6.45, 5.11.1
  - and separate confederacies, 1.82n2
  - substantial agreement among, 3.3.45
  - traditional view of, 1.3–4
  - and the Union, 1.86n2
  - views of, on representation, 1.44–45

- Anti-Federalists (*continued*)
  - in Virginia, vol. 5 pt.2 intro., 5.16 intro.
  - weak arguments of, 1.71-72
- Anti-Federalist position
  - basic dilemma of, 1.6
  - development of, 1.32
- Anti-Federalist writings, wide and speedy distribution of, 2.7n68
- Anti-Foederalist*, No. I, 4.23.1-3
- Anti-Foederalist*, No. II, 4.23.4-8
- anti-republicanism, encouragement of, by French Revolution, 6.14.153
- anti-republicans, Federalists
  - characterized as, 2.8.72, 2.9.119
- anti-slavery movement, 6.6.12
- Antony, Mark, 4.28.2
- appeals, judicial
  - amendment restricting, 5.4.6
  - civil law and, 3.5.6, 3.11.38
  - Columbian Patriot on, 4.28.4
  - expense and inconvenience of, 4.5.2, 6.2.2
  - James Monroe on, 5.21.35
- appellate jurisdiction
  - Aristocrotis' approval of, 3.16.13
  - of federal courts, 2.7.42, 4.9.16
  - possible congressional limitation of, 2.9.176
  - of Supreme Court, 2.4.91-92, 2.8.43, 2.8.45, 2.9.168-77; lack of congressional power over, 3.3.51; possible use of as political weapon, 2.9.171; with respect to both law and fact, 2.4.92, 2.4.94, 2.9.175, 3.2.7, 3.5.6, 3.11.38-39
- appellate power, federal, burden of, on poor and middle classes, 2.9.177
- appointment of officers, power of, 2.8.169-75
  - federal executive and, 2.9.20
  - role of Senate in, 4.3.12, 6.1.27
- Aragon, 5.1.40, 5.1.66
- arbitrary government. *See* government, arbitrary
- arbitrary power
  - right of people to resist, 2.4.96
  - trial by jury and, 2.4.93
- archons, 5.1.23
- Arians, 5.1.106
- Aristides (Alexander Contee Hanson), 5.1
  - on bill of rights, 5.1.5, 5.1.10-11, 5.1.18
  - on congressional powers, 5.1.61-62
  - criticism of anonymous authors, 5.1n2
  - on concurrent jurisdictions, 5.1.89, 5.1n59
  - on general warrants, 5.1n8
  - and judiciary, 5.1.88
  - [Maryland] Farmer's debate with, 5.1.84-90
  - on Montesquieu, 5.1n13
  - reasons of, for revealing his name, 5.1.88
  - on standing armies, 5.1.45
  - on state courts, 5.1.89
- aristocracy, 2.2.15, 2.6.31
  - Alexander Hamilton on, 6.12n17
  - compound of, with monarchy, 3.9.62
  - detestation of, 4.26.7
  - encouragement of, by federal Constitution, 2.6.43, 2.7.24, 4.3.11, 4.13.29, 5.6.2, 6.12.16
  - encroachment of, 5.11.2
  - essential difference of, from democracy, 3.12.11
  - fear of, 5.14.40
  - foe to public virtue, 4.28.8
  - irresponsibility of, 2.7 intro.
  - [Maryland] Farmer on, 1.57-58, 5.1.26-32
  - in Massachusetts, 4.4.28
  - [Pennsylvania] Farmer on, 3.14.2
  - Robert Livingston on, 6.12n23
  - role of, in legislation, 6.12.18
  - and security for popular rights, 6.8.14-15
  - and Senate, 2.7.48, 6.1.26-28, 6.1.34-36
  - tenacity of, 3.3.51
  - Timothy Pickering on, 2.8n6
  - transformation of republican government into, 4.19.4
  - Watchman's warning against, 4.22.1-3
- aristocracy, artificial, 4.8.1
- aristocracy, constitutional, 2.8.97
- aristocracy, hereditary, 4.11.4

- aristocracy, moderate, 3.9.41
- aristocracy, natural, 1.17, 3.16.3
  - characteristics of, 2.8.97
  - Federalist view of, 1.44
  - John Adams on, 2.8n64
  - [Maryland] Farmer on, 1.57–58
  - men of wealth and ability, 2.8.25
  - and Senate, 2.9.42
- aristocracy, Venetian, 2.7.67, 3.5.13, 4.25.3
- aristocratic government
  - and influence of Senate, 2.8.170
  - prevention of, 5.9.2
- aristocratic party, 3.4.1
  - influence of, over a weak president, 3.9.65
- aristocratic principles
  - correspondence of, to one aspect of human nature, 5.18.6
- aristocrats, Roman, 4.23.3(4)
- Aristocrotis (pseud.), 3.16
  - argument of, 3.4 intro.
  - on powers of Federal Government, 1.66
- Aristotle, 1.80n2, 5.1.21
- Armed Neutrality, League of, 3.9.44
- armies
  - congressional right to maintain, 4.1.2
  - difficulty of disbanding, 4.2.8
  - dissipation of, 5.1.56
  - power to raise and support, 2.4.59, 2.8.39, 2.8.202, 2.8.220, 2.9.6, 2.9.112–14, 3.16.8, 4.5.2, 4.23.3(4); Candidus on, 4.9.11; lack of limits on, 2.9.96; in wartime, 2.9.125
  - relationship of, to money, 5.14.15
  - taxation necessary to support, 6.1.25
  - use of, to gain political power, 2.9.100
- arms
  - possession of, by the people, 2.8.217
  - purchase of, 4.5.2
  - recourse to, 4.10.12, 4.19.4
  - right to bear, 3.11.13, 5.1.44
- army, British
  - attempt to reduce size of, 2.9.99–101
  - seizure of power by, under Cromwell, 2.9.117
  - seizure of slaves by, 4.26.10
  - seldom employed in executing laws, 2.9.17
- army, federal
  - expense of, 3.9.46–47
  - method of raising, 4.9.15
  - possible threat to republican government by, 2.9.119–20, 3.3.31
  - power of president to fill vacancies in, 5.10.2
  - president as commander-in-chief of, 2.4.85–86, 5.10.2
  - problems created by, 6.14.43
  - proposed limit on movements of, 4.6.75
  - two-year limit on appropriations for, 3.6.20, 4.2.8
  - use of, to collect taxes, 3.7.2, 3.16.18
- army, peacetime, 2.9.96, 3.2.7, 4.14.3, 6.6.34
  - Brutus on, 2.9.125
  - congressional discretion concerning, 4.23.3(4)
  - congressional power to raise, 3.13.4
  - Democratic Federalist on, 3.5.10–12
  - proposed amendment banning, 5.9.7
  - Samuel Chase on, 5.3.16–17
  - and state bills of rights, 5.1.44
  - test of value of, 2.9.104
  - Watchman on, 4.22.4
  - See also* standing army
- army, Roman, 2.9.100
- arsenals, 2.9.124–26
- Articles of Confederation
  - admission of new states under, 5.20n5
  - amendment of, 2.1.3, 2.3.4, 2.6.9, 2.6n7, 3.2.2, 3.3.42, 3.11.3, 4.3.26, 4.6.43, 4.6.78, 4.13.6–7, 4.14.10, 5.3.1; Citizen on, 6.5.4; Countryman on, 6.7.4, 6.7.8; Countryman from Dutchess County on, 6.6.20; Georgian on, 5.9.3; Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.24; Sidney on, 6.8.13
  - Anti-Federalists on inadequacies of, 1.28
  - apportionment of taxes under, 3.6.43

## Index

- Articles of Confederation (*cont.*)  
 basic flaw of, 1.71–72  
 compact among states, 4.13.16  
 competition of, with new Constitution, 3.1.4  
 debts and contracts under, 2.7.167  
 defects of, 2.1.8, 2.4.32, 2.5 intro., 5.14, 5.14.41–43  
 disregard of, by Federalists, 2.4.36  
 embodiment of principles of Revolution, 1.8  
 equality of states under, 2.4.28, 2.4.33, 2.4.35, 2.4.45, 3.6.12  
 failure of, to maintain harmony among states, 2.5.6  
 fair trial not given to, 5.14.1  
 formulation of, in war crisis, 3.6.2–3  
 framers of, 3.8.10, 5.12.2  
 fundamental soundness of, 5.14.49  
 general dissatisfaction with, 3.3.18  
 Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.1  
 James Monroe on, 5.21.5–11  
 limitation of Congress to powers expressly granted in, 3.3.8  
 not nullified by violations, 4.4.18  
 original compact of government, 2.6.3  
 points of agreement with new Constitution, 5.14.45  
 power to raise troops under, 2.9.112–14, 4.2.8  
 prohibition of standing armies in the states by, 2.9.112  
 proposed amendment to, 4.6.42, 4.6.56  
 publication of congressional proceedings under, 5.16n33  
 ratification of, 2.5.20, 4.4.13  
 restricting effect of in wartime, 5.12n2  
 Richard Henry Lee's opinion of, 5.6 intro.  
 rotation of representatives under, 2.8.147  
 second article, 2.5.9  
 state sovereignty affirmed in, 2.7.37, 2.7.98, 3.6.51, 3.11.27  
 subversion of, 4.10.4  
 superiority of, to state constitutions, 4.13.16  
 tax quotas under, 2.8.123  
 time allowed for consideration of, 4.4.13  
 unanimous consent needed for dissolution of, 2.4.110–14, 4.2.11, 4.10.4  
 undelegated powers reserved to states by, 3.5.2  
 violation of, by federal convention, 1.7, 3.11.9n, 5.12.2  
 want of energy in, 5.7.4  
*See also* Confederation
- arts, in ancient Greece and Rome, 4.6.6, 4.6.49  
 Asiatic monarchies, 4.6.68  
 assemblies, numerous, 2.8.178  
 assemblies, popular, 3.8.5  
 assemblies, provincial, 4.28.4  
 assemblies, state. *See* legislatures, state  
 assembly, freedom of, 2.7.55, 2.8.86, 5.6.5  
 assent, royal, 5.1.10, 5.15.1  
 assessments, unequal, 4.3.21  
 assessors, federal, 4.3.21  
 assizes, lords justices of, 6.7.1  
 associations, civil, 4.3.1  
 Assyrian empire, 3.16.16  
 atheism, as sign of social decay, 6.14.134, 6.14.136  
 atheists  
   eligibility of, for public office, 4.23.3(9)  
   exclusion of, from toleration, 1.22, 4.25.5
- Athens  
   corruption of, by luxury, 6.14.122, 6.14.135  
   government of, 5.1.23  
   rivalry of, with Sparta, 2.6.13  
   ruin of, by overconfidence, 2.6.48  
   Thirty Tyrants of, 3.3.51
- attainder, bills of, 6.13.5  
   in Josiah Philips case, 5.16n13  
   injury to community by, 2.9.103  
   prohibition of, 2.8.51, 2.9.30, 4.9.22
- attorney-general, 4.15.4, 4.6.21  
 augurs, Roman, 3.16.14, 4.12.6  
 Augustine (Austin) of Hippo, 5.1.106  
 Augustus (Octavian), 2.7.36, 5.1.96,



Augustus (*continued*)

5.9.2, 4.28.2

Austin, Benjamin, 4.9 intro.

Austria, House of, 5.1.25, 5.1.40,  
5.1.74

authority

basis of, 3.14.2

division of, between state and na-  
tion, 5.1.57

doubtful cases resolved in favor  
of, 4.6.51

establishment of, 3.14.2

inequality of, in different states,  
4.6.29

necessity of, for good govern-  
ment, 2.5.22

nonexistence of, in State of Na-  
ture, 2.4.29

not given by nature to any man,  
2.9.24

universal abuse of, 4.3.17

authority, hereditary, 5.1.74

avarice, 2.4 intro. n9

Federalist reliance on in govern-  
ment, 1.48

neglect of public duty and, 4.18.1

Mercy Warren on, 6.14.153–54

Bacon, Francis, 6.8.1, 6.8.32

bail, excessive, 2.7.55, 2.9.28,  
3.11.13, 5.6.5, 5.14.10,  
5.16.36–37

Bailey, Francis, 2.7.165, 2.7n97

Baird, John, 3.11.56

Baird, Richard, 3.11.56

balance

among classes in legislature,  
2.8.97

constitutional, and legislative bal-  
ance, 1.62

balanced government, 2.8.125,  
2.8.173, 2.9n112

Federalist views of, 1.55–56,  
1.59–60

impossibility of, 2.7.7

not contained in federal Constitu-  
tion, 2.8.30

proposed by John Adams, 2.7  
intro.

*See also* mixed government

balance of power, 5.1.111

balancing of orders, distinguished  
from separation of powers,

2.7n4

ballot, suffrage by, Congress en-  
abled to abolish, 2.7.73

ballots, use of in elections, 3.16.5,  
6.9.17

Baltimore, Federalist sentiment in,  
5.3 intro.

*Baltimore Advertiser*, 2.4 intro.

Bancroft, George, 2.8 intro.

on George Clinton's speeches,  
6.13n1

papers of, 5.3 intro.

transcripts of, 2.6 intro.

bankers, 4.7.1

Bank of North America

charter of, repealed, vol. 3 intro.  
Robert Morris and, 2.7.127

bankruptcy, 2.8.10, 2.8.35, 4.3.21,  
6.13.20

bankruptcy laws

Federal Farmer on, 2.8.35, 2.8.40  
means of increasing federal  
power, 2.8.221

states forbidden to enact, 3.13.5

bankrupts

Anti-Federalists branded as, 4.7.1  
federal city a refuge for, 3.16.2  
and federal office, 4.14.3

banks, early American prejudice  
against, 6.14.47

Barbary pirates. *See* Algerians

Barnwell, Robert, 5.12n14

barons, English, allied with people  
against king, 2.8.103

Basque (Biscayan) Republic,  
5.1.108

Beard, Charles

on Cornelius essay, 5.10n4

on *Federalist* no. 10, 1.92n49

Beardian critique, 1.3–4

Beccaria, Cesare (marquis)

cited by Cato [South Carolina],  
5.10n9

on large and small republics,  
2.9.11

on limits of political society,  
6.8.1n

on origin of laws, 6.14.39

on standing armies, 4.3.29, 4.3n22  
on tendency toward inequality,

2.8.97, 2.8n61, 6.7.1, 6.12.17

Bedford, Duke of (George Neville),  
5.1.27

## Index

- Bedford County, Pennsylvania,  
2.7.184  
beer, tax on, 2.9.59, 5.2.2, 6.7.7  
Berks County, Pennsylvania,  
2.7.184  
Berkshire County, Massachusetts,  
6.14.33  
biblical prophecies, 4.6. intro.  
bigotry, 3.3.27, 5.1.105  
Billias, George A., 2.1 intro.  
bill of rights, 1.3, 1.64–70, 2.7.29,  
2.7.54, 2.8.96, 3.3.53, 3.8.3,  
3.9.18, 3.9.43, 4.6.51, 6.6.34,  
6.10.10  
Agrippa and [Maryland] Farmer  
on, 1.40, 4.6.24, 4.6.71,  
5.1.4–9  
Anti-Federalists and, 1.8, 3.3.45  
Benjamin Rush on, 3.16n6  
Brutus on, 2.9.23, 2.9.25  
Brutus [Virginia] on, 5.15.1  
Candidus on, 4.9.11  
check on Federalist designs, 3.4.5  
Cincinnatus on, 6.1.4  
Citizen on, 6.5.2  
citizen's defenselessness without,  
3.9.67  
Delegate on, 5.19.13–17  
Denatus on, 5.18.7  
Federal Farmer on, 2.8.52  
encroachment of, on the powers  
of government, 3.16.12  
Federalist positions on, 2.2n1  
Federalist Republican on,  
3.6.46–50  
framing of, left to future rulers,  
3.3.51  
Friend to the Republic on, 4.23.6  
George Mason on, 2.2.1, 2.2.13  
Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.5  
ineffectiveness of, under national  
government, 2.3.7  
James Wilson on, 3.5.2, 4.17.2  
John DeWitt on, 4.3.7  
John Francis Mercer on, 5.5.10  
and judiciary control of Congress,  
3.3.12  
Luther Martin on, 2.4 intro. n9  
in Maryland, 2.6.42, 5.1.44, 5.1.86,  
5.3.7  
in Massachusetts, 4.4.23,  
4.6.70–71, 4.13.13, 4.13.16,  
5.1.44, 5.15.1  
necessitated by imprecision of  
language, 4.3.8  
negative nature of, 5.1.15  
[New Hampshire] Farmer on,  
4.17.2, 4.17.9  
in North Carolina, 5.1.44  
Old Whig on, 3.3.21–30  
omission of, from New York con-  
stitution, 6.9.4–5  
One of the Common People on,  
4.8.1, 4.8nn1–2  
Patrick Henry on, 5.16.34–41  
in Pennsylvania, 5.1.44  
possible dangers of, 1.67, 1.69,  
4.17n9, 5.1n3  
practicability of, 2.8.20  
press freedom and, 4.17.3  
protection against despotism,  
3.11.32  
and protection of minority rights,  
4.6.73  
by royal grant, 5.1.5  
Samuel on, 4.14.5  
Sentiments of Many on, 5.20.2  
and social compact, 2.8.19  
and state constitutions, 2.9.25,  
2.9.102  
and trial by jury, 3.3.16  
use of, to control legislature,  
4.17.2  
in Virginia, 5.15.1, 5.16.2, 5.16.5  
Vox Populi on, 4.4.22–24  
Bill of Rights, British, 2.2n1, 2.9.25,  
5.1n4, 5.5.11, 6.9.4  
explicit guarantees of, 3.3.23  
limitation of royal prerogatives  
by, 2.8.103  
[Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.6–7  
Patrick Henry on, 5.16.24  
and standing armies, 5.1.42  
bill of rights, federal, unnecessary in  
a true confederation, 5.18.7  
bill of rights, partial, 1.66, 2.8.51  
bills of rights  
belief of Americans in, 5.6.5  
Sir Robert Filmer on, 5.1.5, 5.1n4  
and unwritten constitutions, 4.8n1  
bills of rights, state, 2.9n23  
amendments to protect, 4.6.75,  
5.4.6  
and Congress, 3.3.15, 5.1.12  
James Wilson on, 5.14.5  
nullification of, 5.3.2

## Index

- bills of rights, state (*continued*)
  - and state legislatures, 2.8.50
  - subordination of, to Constitution, 1.66–67
  - substantial agreement of, 5.1.11
- Bishop, John, 3.11.56, 4.6n32
- bishop, appointment of, 6.6.18
- Blackstone, William, 3.3n8
  - cited by Columbian Patriot, 4.28.4
  - cited by Publius, 5.11n2
  - cited by Richard Henry Lee, 5.6.3
  - on combination of executive and judicial powers, 3.6.23
  - on Court of Exchequer, 2.9.143
  - on Court of King's Bench, 2.9.157
  - defense of monarchy by, 2.8n106
  - on equity, 2.9.137
  - on excise laws, 5.14.7
  - on general verdicts, 2.8.190
  - on impeachment of ministers, 5.15.1
  - on naturalization, 4.13.26
  - on open examination of witnesses, 6.1.19
  - on trial by jury, 2.7.44, 4.15.4, 4.17.22, 6.14.10
  - on Scottish law courts, 3.11.40
- blasphemy, 1.3n49
- Blenheim, Battle of, 5.16.11
- blood, corruption of, 3.14n11
- Bobbé, Dorothie, 6.7 intro. n1
- body politic, 3.6.53
  - growth, decline, and dissolution of, 5.19.11
  - money the vital principle of, 5.16n36
  - natural lifespan of, 5.1.113
- Bolingbroke, Henry St. John (viscount), 6.14.146
- bondage, penalty for nonpayment of tax, 3.14.11
- books, tax on, 2.9.59, 3.14.11
- Borden, Morton, 2.9 intro., 5.5 intro. n1, 6.7 intro. n1
- Borden collection, 3.4 intro.
- Borgia, Cesare, 5.1.107
- borrowing power
  - of Federal government, 2.4.57, 2.9.93
  - need for limitations on, 2.9.94–95
- Boston, 3.9.51
  - contrasted with Philadelphia, 4.3.3, 4.6n19
  - disadvantage of, under new Constitution, 4.12.8
  - influence of, 2.7.166
  - interference with free discussion in, 2.8.63, 2.7.181
  - intimidation of Anti-Federalists in, 3.3.27, 6.3.12
  - newspapers of, 4.13.3
  - press freedom threatened in, 3.9.4
  - prosperity of, 4.6.65
- Boston Athenaeum, 2.8 intro.
- Boston Gazette*, 4.7.8, 4.7.11
- Bostonian (pseud.), 4.21
- Bourbon, Charles (constable of Bourbon), 5.1.67
- Bourbon, House of, 5.1.25
- Bowdoin, James
  - governor of Massachusetts, 6.14.34
  - James Warren and, 4.13 intro.
- boycotts
  - of nonconfederating states, 4.26.11
  - of Pennsylvania Assembly, 3.2 intro., 3.2.3
- Brackenridge, Hugh, 3.1 intro., 3.1n3
- Bracton, Henry, 5.1.10
- Bradford, Thomas, 2.7n48
- Braxton, Carter, 1.91–92n44
- Breading, Nathaniel, 3.11.56
- breweries, 2.9.73
- bribery
  - of excise officers, 5.2.2
  - judicial officers removable for, 2.9.131, 2.9.192
  - legislators exposed to, 2.4.48, 2.9.42
  - use of, to influence Massachusetts convention, 3.9.77
- bridges
  - federal jurisdiction over, 3.13.3
  - state contracts for, 3.14.18
- Britain, Roman expedition against, 5.1.103
- British rule
  - errors and vices of, 2.6.11
  - [Maryland] Farmer on America under, 5.1.112
  - preferability of, to proposed government, 6.6.35
- British subjects, undefined rights of, 4.8.1

## Index

- Brittany, 5.1.108  
 Brown, Robert E., 4.10n4  
 Brunswick, House of, 6.14.124. *See*  
     *also* Hanover, House of  
 Brutus (pseud.), 2.9; 2.7.77, 2.7.133,  
     2.7.163, 6.9 intro.  
     alleged distortion of Constitution  
         by, 2.9.58  
     Candidus on, 4.9.20  
     cited by [New Hampshire]  
         Farmer, 4.17.15  
     cited by Samuel Chase, 5.3.18  
     on homogeneity in republics,  
         1.45, 1.47  
     identity of, 2.9 intro.  
     legal knowledge of, 2.9 intro. n8  
     [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.80  
     outline and assessment of essays  
         of, 2.9 intro.  
     on reservation of rights, 1.67–68,  
         1.70  
     on need to restrain federal power,  
         1.66  
     on standing armies, 2.9.126  
     on Supreme Court, 1.50  
     on tyranny, 1.39  
     theoretical importance of, 1.6  
     vindication of Anti-Federalist po-  
         sition by, 3.9.16  
 Brutus [Virginia] (pseud.), 5.15  
 Brutus, (pseud.; Federalist), 2.2  
     intro.  
 Brutus, Jr. (pseud.), 6.3  
 Bryan, George, 2.7.186, 3.1 intro.,  
     3.2n1  
     identified as author of Penn-  
         sylvania House Minority Ad-  
         dress, 3.2 intro.  
     lampoon by Francis Hopkinson,  
         2.7n94  
     on name “Federalist,” 1.9–10  
     reputed author of Centinel  
         Essays, 2.7 intro., 2.7 intro. n5,  
         2.7n99  
 Bryan, Samuel  
     and Centinel essays, 2.7 intro.,  
         2.7 intro. n4, 2.7n99  
     and Pennsylvania Conven-  
         tion Minority, 3.2 intro n1,  
         3.11n2  
 Bunker Hill, Battle of, 3.5.10,  
     4.3n12  
 bureaucracy, increase of, under new  
     Constitution, 2.8.120, 4.3.23  
 Burgh, James, 3.5.10, 6.8n2  
     argument of, against checks on  
         the people’s will, 1.39–40  
     on depravity of human nature,  
         1.94n24  
     on legal tyranny, 6.8.23  
 Burgoyne, John, 3.5.10  
 Burke, Aedanus, vol. 5, pt. 2, intro.  
     on Rawlins Lowndes, 5.12 intro.  
         n3  
     Society of Cincinnati and, 4.2.10  
 Bute, Earl of (John Stuart), 6.6.33  
 Cabot, George, 2.8 intro.  
 Caesar (pseud.), 3.3n3, 2.6 intro.,  
     2.6nn3–6  
     Cato’s reply to, 2.6.7–9  
     Countryman on, 6.7.12  
 Caesar, Julius, 2.9.117, 4.3.29,  
     4.25.3, 5.1.101  
     destruction of Roman liberties by,  
         2.7.67  
     example of a tyrant, 2.6.34,  
         4.28.2, 5.18.13  
     possibility of a president imitating,  
         3.3.31  
     and power of military, 2.9.100,  
         3.6.21  
     Sidney on, 6.8.37  
     use of oracles by, 4.12.6  
 Caligula, 2.6.34, 2.7.36, 3.10.1,  
     4.13.10, 6.14.136  
 Calvin, John, 5.1.68  
 Camden, Charles Pratt, Earl, 6.1.15  
 Cambridge, Mass., 4.6 intro., 4.12.8  
 Canada, 2.8.224, 6.7.12  
     letter of Congress to, 6.7.1  
     possible admission of, to Union,  
         2.8.85, 5.20n5  
 canals  
     federal jurisdiction over, 3.13.3  
     state contracts for, 3.14.18  
 candidates, rural, allied to town  
     interests, 4.10.11  
 Candidus (pseud.), 4.9; 1.26–27,  
     4.9.22, 4.17.15  
     summary of essays, 4.9 intro.  
 candles, tax on, 3.16.17, 5.2.2  
 Capet, Hugh, 5.1.25  
 capital cases  
     congressional authority in, 2.9.27  
     rights of accused in, 3.11.13

## Index

- capitation tax, 2.4.55, 6.7.7. *See also* poll tax
- captures, cases of, 2.8.185
- Caracalla, 5.1.106
- Carlisle Gazette*, 3.14.1
- Carlisle junto, 2.7.132
- Carrington, Edward, 2.8 intro., 6 intro. n3
- Carroll, Charles, 5.2n1
- Carroll, James, 5.2n1
- carrying trade, 5.12.2
- Carter, Charles, 4.20n2
- Carthage
  - contrast of with Rome, 4.6.49
  - destruction of, 5.1.108
  - large assembly in, 2.8.136
  - loss of liberty by, 4.17.22
  - Polybius on, 5.12.13
  - tranquil government of, 4.6.6, 4.6.49
- cash, scarcity of, 2.4.77. *See also* specie
- Cassius (pseud.), 3.10 intro. n1
  - attacks of, on Richard Henry Lee, 5.15 intro.
  - British ideas of, 5.15.1
  - Brutus [Virginia]’s reply to, 5.15
  - identified as James Sullivan, 4.15 intro. n1
  - on impeachment, 5.15.1
  - on House of Representatives, 1.51 [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.80
  - on oaths of allegiance, 4.4n10
  - reply of, to Agrippa, 4.6n9
  - reply of, to Vox Populi, 4.4 intro. n1
  - on threat of anarchy, 2.7n74
  - on treaties, 5.20n3
- Castile, 4.28.12, 5.1.40
- Caswell, Richard, 2.8n5
- Catalonia, 5.1.40
- Catherine the Great, 5.18.13
- Cato (pseud.), 2.6; 2.7.133, 2.7.163, 2.9 intro. n2, 4.23n3
- Cato [South Carolina] (pseud.), 5.10
- Cato the Censor, 5.1.108
- Cato Letters, 5.15.1
- Cato Uticensis (pseud.), 5.7
- Cato the Younger, 4.25.3, 4.28.12, 5.1.52
- censors, council of, 2.7.70, 3.3.11, 3.11.8, 5.1.82, 5.19.7
- censors, Roman, 2.7.36, 2.7.67
- censorship, 3.3.3
- census-taking, provision for, 2.6.39, 4.13.25
- Centinel (pseud.), 2.7; 1.50–51, 3.16.3, 6.6.49
  - attack of, on checks and balances, 1.55
  - on combining executive and judicial powers, 3.6.23
  - on consolidation, 2.9 intro. n1
  - demagoguery of, 2.8n73
  - on distribution of Anti-Federalist literature, 3.11 intro. n1
  - on ex post facto clause, 3.16.18
  - Federal Republican on, 3.6.7
  - on freedom of press, 1.64
  - identity of, 2.7 intro., 2.7.186, 2.7n99
  - on Massachusetts Anti-Federalists, vol. 4 intro. n3
  - on separation of powers, 1.60–61
  - summary of essays, 2.7 intro.
- certiorari, 2.9.175
- chancellor (Great Britain), 2.7.41
- chancellor (New York), 2.8.90
- chancery, Court of, 2.9.159, 2.9.178, 3.5.5, 3.5.6, 3.11.29
- Charles V (emperor), 4.28.12, 5.1.40
- Charles I (England), 2.7.113, 3.3.23, 5.1.73, 5.16.24
- Charles II (king of England), 3.3.23, 4.18.1, 5.1.102
- Charles Edward (prince), 5.1.75
- Charleston, South Carolina, 5.12 intro.
- Charlestown, Capitulations of, 4.25.2
- charters, 4.6.25, 5.12.1, 5.12.2
- Chase, Jeremiah T., 5.2n1, 5.4.4, 5.4.11
- Chase, Samuel, 5.3; 5.2n1
  - on bill of rights, 1.67, 2.2n1
  - career of, 5.3 intro.
  - at Maryland Convention, 5.4.4, 5.4.11
  - Maryland opposition leader, vol. 5 intro.
  - on representation, 5.1 intro.
- Chatham, Earl of (William Pitt), 6.8.18
- checks and balances
  - Alexander Hamilton on, 1.54–56
  - Anti-Federalist attitudes toward,

- checks and balances (*continued*)
  - 1.54–56, 1.58–59
  - in bicameral legislature, 2.8.146
  - in British government, 5.16.14
  - John Adams on, 2.7.7, 2.7.10
  - limitation of democratic influences by, 3.16.4
  - necessitated by temptations of power, 4.3.12
  - Patrick Henry on, 5.16.2, 5.16.14
  - in state governments, 2.8.89
  - See also* balanced government
- Chesapeake Bay, 2.4.73
- chief justice
  - and impeachments, 2.4.88
  - James Wilson's ambition to become, 2.7.159, 2.7n85
  - possible choice of, as president, 4.16.2
- Chitwood, Oliver Perry, 2.8 intro. n17, 5.6 intro. n2
- Christian II (of Sweden), 5.1.35
- Christian charity, 3.9.82
- Christianity
  - Aristocrotis on, 3.16.14
  - corruption of, 5.1.106–7
  - recognition of, as America's religion, 2.4.108
  - social effects of, 3.16.15, 5.8.5
- Christianity, nonsectarian, instruction of the people in, 5.18.5
- Christian piety, 4.18.2
- church, national, 3.3.29
- Cicero, 3.12.11, 5.1.21
- cider
  - monopolies on production of, 2.9.72
  - taxes on, 2.9.59, 2.9.72, 5.2.2, 6.7.7
- Cincinnati, Society of the, 3.9.76, 6.14.43
  - George Washington and, 4.20.1
  - public support for, 4.2.10
  - and support for the Constitution, 4.7.1
- Cincinnatus (ancient Roman), 4.25.3
- Cincinnatus (pseud.), 6.1; 2.7.133, 2.7.163
  - and Democratic Federalist, 3.5 intro.
  - identification of, 6.1 intro. n2
- Citizen (pseud.), 6.5; 1.87n9, 1.96n32, 2.7n5
- Citizen of America (Noah Webster), 3.6.7, 3.6.22, 4.4n1
- Citizen of New Hampshire (pseud.), 3.3n33
- Citizen of New York (John Jay), 2.8n54, 6.11 intro., 6.11n23
- Citizen of Pennsylvania (pseud.), 3.2 intro.
- Citizen of Philadelphia (pseud.), 2.8n54
- citizenry, republican, characteristics of, 1.19–20
- Citizens (Swedish social order), 5.1.35
- citizenship, common, among states, 2.9.156
- civil cases
  - appellate jurisdiction in, 2.9.172–74
  - determination of law and fact in, 2.9.173
  - federal jurisdiction in, 2.4.92
  - government party to, 3.3.16
  - and trial by jury, 2.7.43–44, 4.17.22, 5.1.62
- civil connections
  - Philanthrop on, 4.26n12
  - Phileleutheros on, 4.27.5
- civil establishment
  - characteristics of, 2.8.168
  - expense of, 2.9.63
- civil law
  - connection of, with arbitrary power, 6.1.21
  - corruption facilitated by, 2.8.192
  - and federal judicial power, 3.11.38
  - and new Constitution, 6.1.22
  - secret testimony and, 6.1.19
  - and Supreme Court, 2.8.189
  - and use of torture, 2.8.105
- civil law courts, 3.5.5
- civil laws, execution of, 4.3.27
- civil list, 3.10.7, 4.28.4, 5.3.18
  - in Great Britain, 5.9.7
- civil prosecutions, use of, to oppress people, 3.3.16
- civil service, 1.7n36
- civil war
  - Anti-Federalists accused of helping to provoke, 3.9.60
  - bitterness of, 2.5.18
  - Brutus on, 2.9.53
  - consequence of rejecting the Con-

## Index

- civil war (*continued*)
  - stitution, 4.9.4, 2.6n4
  - Edmund Randolph on, 2.5.14
  - Luther Martin on, 2.4.114
  - Melancton Smith on, 6.12.3
  - necessity of to achieve consolidation, 2.8.4
  - Plebeian on, 6.11.8–10
  - Republican Federalist on, 4.13.27
- Civil War, English, 2.9.101, 5.1.75
- Civil War crisis, 1.76
- Civis Rusticus (pseud.), 1.99n6, 2.2n1
- Clarendon, Earl of (Edward Hyde), 5.15.1
- Clark, Abraham, 2.8n5
- class conflict, 5.1n20
- classes, economic, representation of, 5.14.30
- classes, social
  - natural division of society into, 6.12.16
  - representation of, 2.8.97, 2.9.42, 5.3.20
- Claudius (emperor), 4.12.6
- Clay, Henry, 1.6n28
- clergy, 4.17.5
  - exclusion of, from public office, 2.8.87, 6.9.29
  - Mercy Warren on, 6.14.166
  - support for Constitution among, 3.16.15n
  - support of, by law, 4.24.4
- clergy, Popish, 2.8.191
- clergy, Swedish, 5.1.35
- clerks (Episcopal church), 5.8.5
- climate, effect of, on people's character, 4.6.16, 4.6.48
- Clinton, DeWitt, 6.6 intro., 6.7 intro.
- Clinton, George, 6.13; 2.3 intro., 2.4.2
  - and Alexander Hamilton, 2.6 intro. n9
  - career of, 6.13 intro.
  - on Countryman's letters, 6.7 intro. n4
  - and New York Convention, 6 intro.
  - on people's will, 1.39
  - possible author of Cato letters, 2.6 intro.
- Clymer, Daniel, 3.9n31
- Clymer, George, 3.1 intro., 3.2.2, 3.2.5
- Cockey, Edward, 5.4.11, 5.4.13
- coercion
  - government by, 5.1.52
  - of nonconfederating states, 4.26.11
  - role of, in government, 1.42–43, 2.5.10
  - of states by federal government, 2.5.18, 2.8.209
- Cogswell, Thomas
  - identified as Friend to the Republic, 4.23 intro. n1
  - identified as Friend to the Rights of the People, 4.23 intro. n1
  - identified as [New Hampshire] Farmer, 4.17 intro.
- coinage, federal control of, 2.8.10, 2.8.35, 6.10.4
- Coke, Edward, 6.13.10
  - on certainty in political compacts, 2.6.34
  - on general verdicts, 2.8.190
  - on people's possession of their liberties, 6.1.10
  - and Petition of Right, 5.1.8
- Colden, Cadwallader, 2.7.45
- collectors, federal, 4.3.21
- Colonial America, [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.112
- Columbian Patriot (pseud.), 4.28
- commerce
  - Anti-Federalist attitude toward, 1.20–21, 1.87n6
  - decline of, 3.6.3
  - duties on, 2.4.45, 2.6.40
  - establishment of, on permanent basis, 4.9.24
  - federal Constitution's expected benefits to, 4.9.13
  - federal power over, 2.8.10, 2.8.35
  - handmaid of liberty, 2.7.126
  - inability of states to protect, 3.3.32
  - growth of, 2.9.92
  - national system of, 4.6.65, 4.9.35
  - principle of union in large state, 4.6.30
  - promotion of, 1.30–31
  - spirit of, 4.6.6
  - treaties of. *See* treaties, commercial

## Index

- commerce (*continued*)
  - under Confederation, 2.5.4
  - See also* trade
- commerce, American, British hindrances to, 2.7.86–87, 5.7.4
- commerce, state, effect of treaties on, 4.14.4
- commercial agents, British, 6.14.20
- commercial towns
  - desire of to regulate trade, 2.8.7
  - effect of proposed government on, 4.17.8
- Committee, Select, compromise on representation, 2.4.34, 2.4.36
- Commodus, Emperor, 5.1.96, 5.1.106
- common consent, 2.9.24
- common defense
  - under Confederation, 5.14.44
  - purposes of government, 2.9.150
  - responsibility of federal head, 2.8.208
  - responsibility of legislature, 2.9.5
- common defense restriction,
  - ineffectiveness of, 2.9.77–78
- common good, 2.9.24, 5.14.2, 5.14.6
- common law
  - and appellate jurisdiction, 2.9.175, 3.5.7
  - federal procedures inconsistent with, 3.11.39
  - foundation of, 2.2.1
  - and innovation, 2.7.4
  - instruction of people in, 5.18.9
  - legislature's right to alter, 4.6.23
  - in New York, 6.9.22
  - in proposed Constitution, 6.1.22
  - separation of law and equity in, 2.8.42
  - and Supreme Court, 2.8.189
  - and trial by jury, 3.3.16
  - use of, in states, 2.8.19, 3.5.5
  - in Virginia, 5.16.36
- common law principles
  - and government of Federal City, 2.8.223
  - subordination of, to Constitution, 1.66–67
- common law procedures, need for guarantee of, 5.6.5
- common law rights, peril to, 5.1.13
- common pleas, courts of, 3.11.40, 4.6 intro., 4.17.5
- common sense
  - in juries, 2.8.190
  - value of, in government, 4.23.8, 4.23n3
- Common Sense* (Paine), 2.7.177, 3.9.44
- Commonwealth, English, 4.18.1
- Commonwealthmen, 1.39
- commotions, popular, 2.9.151
  - and security of state governments, 4.6.21
- community, in Anti-Federalist terminology, 1.86n4
- compact, original, 2.6.3, 6.13.20
- compacts
  - between government and people, 4.3.7, 4.3.8
  - sacredness of, 5.12.2
  - source of rights, 2.8.200
- compacts, fundamental, 4.10.5
- compacts, political and social
  - frame of government established by, 5.14.2
  - necessity of explicitness in, 2.6.34, 2.8.63, 4.3.7
  - Plebeian on, 6.11.2
  - protection for fundamental rights in, 2.8.19
- compromise, political, 5.5.5
- comptroller, 2.8.176
- confederacies, separate (partial), 1.24, 4.2n8
  - Federalists and Anti-Federalists on, 1.4n2
  - Federalist warnings against, 2.7n75
  - improbability of, 2.7.142
  - objections to, 2.5.26–30
  - Observer on, 6.4.3
  - prohibited by Articles of Confederation, 5.21.5
- confederacy, nine-state, 5.16.1
- confederation (confederacy, confederate government)
  - alleged novelty of, 6.11.29
  - desirability of, 5.1.17
  - distinguished from national government, 2.4.39, 2.4.83, 5.1.50
  - elements of, 6.13.18
  - avored by advocates and opponents of proposed government, 2.9.56
  - Federalist opinion on, 1.12



- confederation (*continued*)
  - league of friendship among states, 2.8.81
  - proposed Constitution a departure from principles of, 6.13.19
  - role of states in, 6.13.23
  - See also* republics, federal
- Confederation (U.S.)
  - alteration of, by unanimous consent, 6.11.8
  - annihilation of, 2.6.9, 2.7.67, 3.14.22
  - authority of Congress under, 5.14.5
  - basic soundness of, 6.5.4
  - criticisms of, 2.7.5, 3.7.1, 5.12.2
  - declared ended by Washington, 4.20.3
  - defects of, 5.19.1
  - defects of, magnified, 2.8.207
  - dependence of, on voluntary exertion, 2.8.6
  - desirability of retaining, 5.12.2
  - economic policy of, 2.5.15
  - essential change required in, 2.5.22
  - Federalist desire to supersede, 3.1.4
  - federal republic in strict sense, 4.6.33
  - finances of, 2.7.80, 2.8.206
  - John Quincy Adams on failure of, 1.83n44
  - Mercy Warren on, 6.14.5
  - new Constitution's improvement on, 2.8.69
  - Patrick Henry on value of, 5.16.2
  - powerlessness of, 2.5.8, 2.8n54, 5.16n11
  - Rawlins Lowndes on, 5.12.1
  - rebellion against, 4.4.13
  - reform of, 6.11.12–13
  - renunciation of allegiance to, 6.6.22
  - Sidney on, 6.8.19
  - subversion of, 3.6.3., 6.9.2
  - taxing power of, during Revolution, 2.9.88
  - unanimous consent for abolition of, 2.8.229, 3.11.9n
  - unauthorized dissolution of, 5.3.1, 5.9.3
  - unicameral legislature, 2.8.134
  - union of separate republics, 5.14.23
  - unsoundness of its governments, 5.1.113
  - virtual dissolution of, by states, 5.12.4, 5.12n13
  - See also* federal government, old
- confederation, balanced, 5.14.13
- confederation, commercial, 4.9.22–37
- confederations, European, 2.4.30
- confessions, criminal, 5.16.37
- confidence, mutual, 4.6.26
- confidence in government, 1.50–52
  - danger of too much, 2.6.48
  - and execution of laws, 2.9.48
  - and familiarity with rulers, 2.9.18
  - Impartial Examiner on, 1.84n11
  - restoration of, 4.9.26
- confiscation laws, 5.12.1
- confiscation of property, 2.9.59, 3.14n11, 4.6.42
- Congress (federal legislature), 2.4.32
  - accountability of, to states, 2.9.114
  - additional powers for, 2.5.22, 2.7.92, 2.9.146, 3.3.32, 4.10.15, 6.8.1, 6.8.23
  - alienation of people from, 5.14.31
  - alleged superior merit and wisdom of, 4.5.2, 5.16.17
  - and approval of new Constitution, 2.4.111–12, 3.1.3
  - basic similarity of House and Senate, 4.3.14
  - bill of rights standard for, 5.20.2
  - borrowing power of, 3.14.12, 4.22.4
  - Brutus on, 2.9.37–63
  - choice of, by small majority, 4.4.20
  - confession of guilt by, 4.26.15
  - conflict of, with states, 2.7.99, 3.8.3
  - control of congressional salaries by, 2.5.41, 4.10.8–9, 4.23.3(2), 4.28.4, 5.3.17
  - control of western territories by, 4.2.6
  - controversies between House and Senate, 2.4.51
  - and convention delegates, 3.1.2
  - credit of, 3.9.48

Congress (*continued*)

- destruction of balance in, 4.13.28
- discrimination among states by, 4.14.2
- disposal of land by, 4.6.10
- division of, against itself, 2.6.14
- division of, into three branches, 4.22.4
- encroachments on rights of, 2.5.6
- excessive powers given to, 3.6.17
- exclusion of, from ratification process, 4.28.4, 4.13.21
- expression of states' will in, 6.13.18
- expulsion of members by, 2.8.28, 4.10.10
- extravagance of, with public money, 4.23.8
- and federal city, 2.8.224
- foreign influence in, 2.5.22, 4.6.45, 4.6.59
- and foreign titles, 5.10.4
- heterogeneity of, 4.5.20
- Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.13
- impotence of, 2.7.103
- inability of, to serve whole country, 2.9.19
- increase of attendance rate in, 2.8.118
- independence of people, 4.9.11
- and Indian wars, 3.5.12
- influence of courts on, 2.9.148
- insufficient size of, 5.5.7
- interpretation of Constitution by, 2.9.196
- irresponsibility of, 5.14.10
- James Monroe on, 5.21.21, 5.21.31
- judge of constitutionality of laws, 2.7.122
- judge of propriety of taxes, 2.7.96
- judge of what is "necessary and proper," 3.3.12
- judicial powers of, 3.11.28
- levy of imposts by, 3.3.33
- likelihood of corruption in, 6.12.34
- limitation of taxing power of, 4.15.4
- limited concerns of, 2.8.130
- mediation of disputes between states, 4.6.57
- medium of communication between states, 3.3.3
- monopoly of revenue by, 5.16.16
- omnipotence of, 2.7.15, 2.7n92
- people's lack of confidence in, 3.11.50
- people's liberty dependent on virtue of, 3.3.13, 4.8.1
- periodic accountability of, 5.16.8, 5.16.14, 5.16.20
- possession of powers not reserved, 2.8.198
- postponement of elections by, 4.6.78, 4.26.5
- power of, to abolish juries, 5.1.62, 5.6.3, 6.7.2
- power of, to designate president, 3.13.3
- power of, to interfere in behalf of people, 2.8.163
- power of, to legislate on presidency, 4.5.2
- power of, to levy execution on states, 2.9.166
- power of, to perpetuate itself, 4.18.1
- power of, to raise and support armies, 2.8.39, 2.8.220, 2.9.6, 3.16.7, 4.23.3(4)
- powers of, 2.5.41, 2.8.82, 2.9.5, 3.3.12
- power to fill vacancies in, 4.6.60
- president's independence of, 5.21.27
- president's power to adjourn, 5.10.2
- president's power to convene, 5.12.4
- regulation of elections by, 2.4.43, 2.6.46-47, 2.7.16, 2.7.22, 2.7.73-74, 2.8.152, 3.11.24, 4.4.2-3, 4.4.6, 4.6.60, 4.10.10, 4.13.28, 5.15.1
- repeal of state laws by, 2.9.8, 3.3.33, 3.6.33, 3.14.18, 3.16.6, 5.3.16
- role of, in amending Articles of Confederation, 4.13.7
- safety of entrusting government to, 3.14.11
- secret proceedings of, 3.13.5, 4.5.2
- and state constitutions, 2.8.51, 3.13.3, 4.4.24

## Index

- Congress (*continued*)  
 and state legislatures, 2.4.16,  
 2.8.10  
 supposed incorruptibility of,  
 2.8.138  
 suppression of state taxes by,  
 2.8.195, 3.3.33, 3.11.21, 3.16.6  
 Supreme Court and, 2.9.176  
 supremacy of, 5.14.4  
 taxing powers of, 2.4.55–56,  
 2.7.11, 2.9.63, 3.9.80, 3.16.6,  
 4.10.8, 5.14.6  
 time and place of sessions, 5.12.4  
 training of militia by, 3.13.3  
 transmission of federal plan to  
 states, 4.13.10  
 tripling of its membership, 3.9.24  
 warmaking powers of, 3.6.20,  
 5.16.23  
 wide discretion of, 2.8.49, 2.9.57,  
 4.5.2  
 Congress, Commercial Committee  
 of, 2.7.168  
 Congress, members of. *See* legis-  
 lators, federal  
 Congress, new, 6.10.2–3  
 amendments recommended to,  
 3.14.22  
 comparison of, with old Congress,  
 4.5.2, 5.14.34  
 consideration of amendments by,  
 4.15.3  
 enforcement of its will, 4.3.27  
 Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.5  
 not representative of people,  
 3.9.81  
 and payment of interest on na-  
 tional debt, 6.1.41  
 probable abuse of power by,  
 3.9.94, 4.5.12  
 proposal of amendments by,  
 5.16.2  
 restraint of federal officers by,  
 5.16.6  
 Congress, old  
 annual elections for, 4.3.9, 4.13.5  
 executive nature of, 3.5.2, 2.8.135  
 financial problems of, 6.14.18  
 James Monroe on, 5.21.9–11  
 letters of, to England, Ireland,  
 and Canada, 6.7.1, 6.12.17  
 limitations on power of, 6.12.23  
 [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.54  
 New England delegates to, 5.7.8  
 no judicial jurisdiction, 3.5.2  
 noninterference of, in state af-  
 fairs, 5.14.5  
 no power to raise money, 3.5.2  
 representation of sovereign states  
 in, 5.14.34  
 request for additional powers by,  
 6.8.25  
 requisitions of, 2.7.79, 3.9.86,  
 3.11.2, 4.5.10, 6.1.45  
 role of, in raising troops, 2.9.114  
 ruinous fiscal policy of, 2.7.79  
 states' defiance of, 5.10.2  
 unicameral body, 4.4.38, 2.8.135  
 use of secrecy by, 6.9.2  
 vices of, 6.8.24  
 Congress lands, 4.6.14  
 congressional powers  
 Agrippa on, 4.6.17, 4.6.36  
 effect of, on states; 3.11.18  
 and power of federal courts,  
 2.9.142  
 purposes of, 3.6.34  
 William Symmes on, 4.5.2  
 congressional proceedings, monthly  
 publication of, 5.16n33  
 Connecticut, 2.4.34  
 choice of counselors in, 2.8.159  
 definition of rights in, 5.16.24  
 democratic government of, 4.22.5  
 dispute of, with New York,  
 4.12.10  
 Federalist activity in, 6.3.12  
 governor's membership in upper  
 house, 3.12.16  
 model government of, 5.1.113  
 mode of election in, 2.8.89, 6.6.30  
 motives of, for ratification,  
 4.28.11  
 and New Jersey Resolutions,  
 2.4.21  
 noncommercial state, 4.6.28  
 popular election of legislature in,  
 2.8.81, 2.8.88  
 ratification in, 6.11.10  
 revenue and representation in,  
 4.14.2  
 tax contribution of, 4.14.1  
 vigorous government of, 4.6.8  
*Connecticut Courant*, 2.2 intro. n6,  
 2.6 intro., 2.8 intro.  
*Connecticut Journal*, 4.2

## Index

- conscience, liberty of, 3.3.23, 6.14.8
  - Anti-Federalist position on, 1.64
  - Cincinnatus on, 6.1.19
  - Countryman on, 6.7.13
  - inviolability of, 3.11.13
  - peril to, 5.16.2
  - silence of new Constitution on, 3.9.13, 3.9.21
- conscience, rights of, 5.16.24
- conscientious objectors
  - influence of, in Pennsylvania, 3.9.12
  - lack of provision for, in proposed system, 1.97n2, 2.7.75, 3.8.3, 3.8n5, 3.9.11, 3.11.53, 5.3.17, 5.4.7, 6. 10n2
- conscription, military, and pacifists, 3.9.11
- consent
  - of parties to a contract, 4.3.11
  - society founded upon, 4.3.1
- conservatism, Anti-Federalists and, 1.7, 1.20–21, 1.58
- Consider Arms et al., 4.26
  - motivation of, 4.27.2
  - sympathy of, for African slaves, 4.27.3
- Consolidation (consolidated government)
  - Albany Antifederal Committee on, 6.10.2
  - Aristocrotis on, 3.16.17n
  - and bill of rights, 1.65
  - coercion necessary for, 2.8.4
  - consistency of, with liberty, 3.11.31
  - cover for special interests, 4.28.4
  - creation of, by direct taxation, 5.17.1
  - definition of, 3.14.9
  - distinguished from federal principle, 2.8.132, 2.8.205, 6.6.45
  - expectations from, not justified, 3.13n1
  - and Federal Farmer, 2.8 intro.
  - Federalist denial of intention to establish, 2.7.162, 6.13.14
  - George Washington on, 1.10–11
  - inappropriateness of, to large countries, 4.6.39
  - incompatibility of, with free principles, 2.8.9–23
  - inimical to personal and property rights, 4.6.39
  - James Monroe on, 5.21.12
  - Patrick Henry on, 5.16.9
  - Pennsylvania Convention Minority on, 3.11.17–30
  - [Pennsylvania] Farmer on, 3.14.9–13
  - Plebeian on, 6.11.15
  - probable effects of, 4.6.51–59
  - proposed by Federal convention, 5.16.1–2
  - and proposed Constitution, 2.7.100, 2.8.1, 2.9.36, 3.3.20, 4.6.18, 4.13.10
  - and relationship among states, 3.9.29
  - safeguards necessary with, 3.6.53
  - Sidney on, 6.8.1
  - unauthorized by people, 4.28.4
  - unsuitability of, for United States, 2.9.5–23, 6.12.40
  - William Symmes on, 4.5.3
  - See also* national government
- consolidation, partial, 2.8.13, 2.8n9
- consolidation, plan of, 6.6.45
- conspiracy
  - in Connecticut, 4.6.8
  - to promote Constitution, 2.7 intro., 2.7.145–47
- conspiracy, antirepublican, 6.14.168
- conspiracy (word), 3.15.2
- constituents
  - access of, to representatives, 2.8.99, 2.9.49, 4.3.14
  - inability of, to control representatives, 5.5.5
  - and Pennsylvania Convention, 3.2.3
- constitution
  - Brutus on formation of, 2.9.23
  - compact between people and rulers, 2.9.196
  - definition of, 2.8.196
  - fundamental law, 3.14.4
  - legislative power circumscribed by, 5.13.5
  - needed to restrain bad rulers, 2.9.54
  - popular rights not guaranteed by, 4.6.66
  - Republicus on characteristics of, 5.13.2–6
  - See also* Constitution, federal

## Index

- constitution, British, 2.4.50, 2.4.51
  - Citizen of America on, 3.6.7
  - form and spirit of, 3.12.17
  - judiciary not interpreters of, 2.9.187
  - [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.6–8, 5.1.75
  - mixture of monarchy, aristocracy, and democracy, 3.14.2
  - Patrick Henry on, 1.58, 5.16.14
  - Rawlins Lowndes on, 5.12.4
  - royal prerogative in, 3.3.31
  - superiority of, 5.5.11
  - supposed example of balanced government, 2.7.7, 2.7.10
  - and trial by jury, 2.4.93, 4.17.22–23
  - unsuitability of, to American conditions, 5.1.113
  - U.S. admirers of, 5.1.56
  - war powers in, 3.6.20
- Constitution, federal
  - and abolition of slavery, 4.26.12
  - acceptance or rejection of, without change, 4.9.3, 4.9.7, 4.9.9
  - agreement of whole people, 2.9.150
  - ambiguities of, 2.9.141, 3.14.22, 5.16.2
  - amendment of, 3.3.2, 4.3.14, 4.13.20; before ratification, 2.1.7, 2.5.36, 3.3.19, 4.6.74, 4.9.8
  - ancient customs threatened by, 2.8.47
  - aristocratic character of, 1.48–52, 2.8.7, 5.2.1
  - artful and deceptive clauses of, 2.7.130
  - and Articles of Confederation, 3.1.4, 4.13.16
  - benefits claimed for, 5.19.1, 6.11.21–22
  - and British constitution, 5.5.11
  - British reaction to adoption of, 3.9.40
  - Brutus, Jr., on, 6.3.2
  - cases arising under, 2.9.134–35
  - Cato on, 2.6.7
  - Cato [South Carolina] on, 5.10 intro.
  - Centinel on, 2.7.153
  - choices involved in considering, 2.1.5
  - circumstances of its framing, 6.9.2
  - combination of executive and legislative powers in, 5.15.1
  - compact among individuals, 2.4.39, 3.11.30, 4.6.69, 4.16.2, 5.1.12, 5.3.2
  - comparison of, with New York's constitution, 6.9.6–30
  - complexity of, 4.2.2
  - compromise nature of, 3.3.14, 3.11.5, 4.3.6
  - Congress favorable to, 3.1.3
  - conscientious objectors unprotected by, 3.3.29, 3.8.3, 3.9.11
  - consequences of ratification, 4.13.24
  - consideration of each part separately, 6.5.4
  - consistency of, 4.5.10
  - and consolidation, 2.7.100, 2.8.1, 2.9.36, 3.3.20, 4.6.18, 4.13.10
  - conspiracy to promote, 2.7.145–47, 5.2.1–4, 6.1.37
  - construction of, for national purposes, 4.3.11
  - contrary to people's habits, 4.1.4
  - correction of evils left to future in, 5.6.1
  - Countryman on, 6.6.28
  - customary revision of, 5.19.7
  - danger to liberty from, 2.6.9
  - and Declaration of Independence, 3.9.56, 5.9.16
  - delay caused by revisions of, 2.7.140
  - departure of, from republican principles, 2.8.230
  - desire for hasty approval of, 2.8.62, 3.2.2, 4.3.2, 4.28.8, 6.1.39
  - destruction of state governments by, 3.3.20
  - devised to find employment for ambitious men, 4.3.15
  - difficulty of amendment after ratification, 2.9.3, 4.3.6
  - dissolution of all contracts inconsistent with, 2.9.57
  - divine sanction claimed for, 2.7.149, 4.9.9
  - division of nation by, 4.14.10

- Constitution, federal (*continued*)  
 encouragement of extravagance  
   by, 4.10.9  
 encouragement of slavery by,  
   4.26.8  
 effects of, on industry and debt,  
   5.16.10  
 ephemeral nature of, 3.9.89  
 experimental nature of, 2.8.208,  
   5.12.1  
 extraordinary manner of its sub-  
   mission to people, 5.21.2  
 faults of, admitted by Framers,  
   4.3.3  
 favored by printers, 2.7.163  
 federal-state balance in, 5.21.36  
 founding generation's view of, 1.3  
 fundamental law, 2.9n101  
 human qualities fostered by, 1.73  
 illegality of, 5.18.4  
 imagined reaction of foreigner to,  
   5.14.1  
 and imposition of military rule,  
   3.9.58  
 inability of, to serve general good,  
   5.14.6  
 incoherence of, 1.54  
 indulgence of toward delinquent  
   states, 3.9.86  
 inspired by nature, 3.16.11  
 interpretation of, 2.9.135, 2.9.141,  
   2.9.149, 2.9.158, 2.9.193  
 John DeWitt on, 4.3.4, 4.3.18  
 judgment of on its own merits,  
   6.3.8  
 liberty of conscience not pro-  
   tected in, 3.9.13  
 maneuvers to secure popular ap-  
   proval of, 2.7.31, 2.7.64,  
   2.7.89-91  
 and Maryland constitution, 2.4.42  
 and Massachusetts constitution,  
   4.4.26-27, 4.4.36-38, 4.13.15  
 Mercy Warren on, 6.14.164  
 mixed nature of, 5.16n40  
 national rather than federal in  
   nature, 2.4n12  
 need for careful consideration of,  
   3.3.4-5, 3.12.1, 4.3.2, 4.9.6,  
   5.16.8  
 no historical precedent for, 4.12.1  
 no real check on government,  
   3.16.15  
 novel features of, 1.7n45  
 oath of support for, 2.7.168,  
   2.9.31, 4.4.34, 4.14.6  
 objectionable articles in, 5.9.3  
 oligarchic principle of, 5.6.2  
 omission of explanatory articles,  
   2.8.197  
 original compact, 2.9.31, 2.9.57  
 partly national, partly federal  
   character of, 1.11-12  
 Pennsylvania penalized under,  
   3.9.85  
 perpetual nature of, 4.3.6  
 points of agreement with Articles  
   of Confederation, 5.14.45  
 power to raise troops under,  
   2.9.112-14  
 presentation of, as only alterna-  
   tive, 2.7.91  
 prestige of its Framers, 3.6n4,  
   4.3.3  
 protection of property rights by,  
   5.5.9  
 questions settled by, 1.3  
 ratification, 2.4.110-12  
 relief expected from, 2.7.5  
 restraints on federal government  
   in, 6.1n10  
 revision of, by new convention,  
   3.3.47  
 revolution proposed by, 5.16.2  
 and state constitutions, 2.9.26,  
   4.3.7, 6.1.16  
 strength of opposition to, 6.11.10  
 supreme law of land, 2.7.15  
 transfer of power from people to  
   few, 2.8.115  
 Virginia's possible rejection of,  
   5.16.8  
 William Penn on, 3.12.1  
 constitution, Roman, 3.6.7, 5.10.2  
 Constitutional Convention, federal,  
   2.8.7  
 accommodations and deals made  
   during, 3.3.14  
 accountability of, to people,  
   3.3.42  
 advisory function of, 5.3.2  
 aristocratic influence in, 6.1.36  
 authority delegated to, 5.16.1  
 authority of, nullified, 4.13.10  
 betrayal of people's hopes by,  
   3.9.75

Constitutional Convention (*cont.*)

Centinel's criticism of, 2.7.92  
 Citizen on purpose of, 6.5.4  
 competence of, to formulate bill of rights, 5.1.12  
 composition of, 2.8.73, 3.11.5, 4.12.1  
 compromise of on representation, 2.4.34–37, 4.3.16  
 Consider Arms et al. on, 4.27.3  
 and consolidation, 4.13.10  
 crimes of, against people, 3.9.83  
 dissenters in, 4.12.1  
 dissolution of, 4.3.6  
 distrust of people, 2.9.50  
 Elbridge Gerry at, 2.1 intro., 2.1.8, 2.1n1  
 extent of its authority, 3.3.41  
 George Mason at, 2.2 intro.  
 George Washington and, 4.20.1  
 illegality of, 3.1 intro., 3.11.9, 6.9.7–8  
 intentions of, 3.6.34  
 internal taxation and, 4.3.20  
 isolation of, 4.17.10  
 James Monroe on, 5.21.26  
 legal actions, objections to, 1.7  
 Mercy Warren on, 6.14.38, 6.14.40, 6.14.48  
 missing delegates, 2.8.7  
 New Jersey Resolutions, 2.4.21, 2.4.28  
 not authorized by people, 3.14.22  
 origins of, 4.9.9  
 parties in, 2.4 intro., 2.4.23–26  
 Pennsylvania delegates, 3.1.2, 3.11.4  
 people's confidence in, 2.1.7  
 popular mandate of, 2.3.5  
 possibility of reconvening, 3.3.19  
 powers of delegates to, 2.4.13, 4.13.9  
 powers exceeded by, 2.3.3, 2.6.9, 3.2.6, 4.13.10  
 prestige of delegates, 4.9.1, 4.26.15  
 pro-British members of, 4.12.1  
 procedural rules of, 2.4.13  
 publication of its debates, 3.9.55  
 public defaulters among delegates, 2.7.168  
 public expectations from, 3.3.18  
 purpose of, 2.1.3, 4.3.2

reasons for choice of delegates, 6.5.4  
 religious opinions of delegates, 3.9.13  
 and representation, 2.4.28–35, 2.8.116  
 right of, to propose new government, 4.13n6  
 secrecy of, 2.4.7, 2.4.13, 2.6.8, 2.7.30, 3.6.9, 3.8.9, 3.11.5, 3.16.18, 4.28.5, 5.16.21, 6.6.22; Albany Antifederal Committee on, 6.10.10; Citizen on, 6.5.4; Plebian on, 6.11.13  
 and state legislatures, 6.6.22  
 suppression of its journals, 3.8.9  
 unanimity of, 2.7.139  
 unauthorized acts of, 6.6.3, 6.10.2  
 usurpation of power by, 2.6.9, 3.14.22  
 violation of Articles of Confederation, 3.11.9n, 4.2.11  
 Virginia Resolutions, 2.4.14–16, 2.4.18, 2.4.21, 2.4.26, 2.4.28–35  
 withdrawal of delegates from, 3.11.5  
 Constitutional Convention, second  
 Agrippa on, 4.6.13  
 Candidus on, 4.9.12  
 Centinel on, 2.7.17  
 Citizen on, 6.5.4  
 Edmund Randolph on, 2.5.35, 2.5.38  
 George Clinton on, vol. 6, pt. 1, intro.  
 George Washington on, 6.6.53  
 [New Hampshire] Farmer on, 4.17.10  
 Old Whig on, 3.3.46  
 Philadelphiensis on, 3.9.68, 3.9.81  
 Plebeian on, 6.11.13  
 Rawlins Lowndes on, 5.12.2  
 Richard Henry Lee on, 5.6.4  
 Samuel Chase on, 5.3.17  
 constitutional council. *See* executive council; presidential council  
 Constitutionals, vol. 3 intro.  
 constitutions  
 frequent changes of, predicted, 4.15.4  
 people's right to alter or annul, 6.14.43

- constitutions (*continued*)
  - permanency of, 4.6.65
  - rule for dissolution of, 4.4.27
- constitutions, state, 2.8.50, 2.8.202
  - amendment protecting, 5.4.6
  - comparison of, with federal Constitution, 2.9.26, 4.3.7
  - and conscientious objectors, 3.9.12
  - conflicts of, with federal Constitution, 4.4.34
  - criticism of, 4.7n1
  - delegation of powers in, 1.65, 3.5.2
  - discordant principles of, 4.1n1
  - European admiration for, 3.10.4, 4.3.2
  - Federal Constitution's threat to, 5.14.10, 5.18.7
  - and interpretation of federal Constitution, 2.8.199
  - inviolability of, 3.11.13, 6.5.4
  - James Monroe on, 5.21.2, 5.21.12
  - nullification of, 2.9.5, 3.3.13, 3.11.32, 4.3.9, 4.13.13, 5.7.4, 6.1.16
  - power to destroy, 4.6.1
  - restrictions on legislatures in, 2.9.102
  - results of their abolition, 6.12.39
  - and revision of laws, 3.3.19
  - separation of powers in, 6.1.31
  - Sidney on, 6.8.19
  - and standing armies, 2.9.112, 2.9n76
  - subordination of, to Articles of Confederation, 4.13.16
  - constitutions, unwritten, 4.8n1
  - consuls, diplomatic, 2.8.169, 2.9.160, 2.9.168
  - consulship, Roman, 2.7.36, 2.7.67, 2.8.178–79, 5.10.2
- Continental Congress, first, 4.26.15, 5.16 intro.
- continental courts. *See* courts, federal; judiciary, federal
- contracts
  - between individuals and states, 2.9.161
  - conditions for voiding, 4.4.27, 5.12.4
  - interpretation of, 2.6.47, 4.3.11
  - invalidation of, 2.7.167
  - modification of, 5.16.24
  - questions concerning, 2.4.55
  - regulation of, 3.11.13
  - states forbidden to impair obligation of, 2.9.182, 3.13.5, 4.9.22
- contradictions, Anti-Federalist attempts to reconcile, 1.6
- convention
  - for amendment of Massachusetts constitution, 4.13.14
  - for commercial purposes, 2.8.7
  - procedure for summoning, 4.13.19
- Convention (pseud.), 4.1n1
- Convention debates, 2.7.151–52
- Convention Parliament, 5.1.6–7, 5.1.11
- conventions, state
  - and amendment of federal Constitution, 2.5.35, 2.8.62, 3.3.40, 3.3.45
  - Brutus, Jr., on, 6.3.12
  - characterization of, 2.8.62
  - dangerous courses facing, 2.8.70
  - exclusion of Framers from, 4.12.4
  - and federal convention, 1.7
  - forum for consideration of Constitution, 5.21.2
  - Gentleman in a Neighbouring State on, 4.2.11
  - lack of preparation for their task, 4.13.10
  - Mercy Warren on, 6.14.50
  - partisans of monarchy in, 4.28.6
  - postponement of, 4.13.4
  - and ratification of Constitution, 2.4.112, 2.5.36, 3.16.3
  - right of, to judge proposed government, 3.3.43
  - sanction for Constitution, 2.7.164
  - and second Constitutional Convention, 4.9.12
  - and state legislatures, 6.6.22
- convicts, 2.8.150, 3.9.27
- Cooke, Jacob, 2.6 intro., 2.6n6
- Cornelius, 4.10
  - and Beard thesis, 4.10n4
- corporate bodies, 3.14.4, 3.14.9
- corporations, 2.7.36, 2.8.147, 4.3.9
- corruption
  - antidotes against, 5.13.2, 6.12.9, 6.12.19
  - impossibility of, in popular government, 5.1.53



## Index

- corruption (*continued*)
  - infrequent elections and, 2.8.147
  - in judiciary, 2.9.192
  - legislators exposed to, 2.4.46, 3.11.36, 6.12.34
- Corsica, 3.9.39
- Cortes (of Spain), 4.28.4, 5.1.40
- Corwin, Edward S., 2.9 intro. n.3, 5.3 intro.
- counsel, right to, 2.8.200
- counterfeiting, 2.8.214
- country, in Anti-Federalist terminology, 1.86n4
- Country Journal* (Poughkeepsie), 2.8 intro.
- Countryman (pseud.), 6.7; 2.8n3, 2.8n20
- Countryman (pseud., Federalist), 6.7 intro. n2
- Countryman from Dutchess County (pseud.), 6.6; 1.89n61
  - relation of, to Countryman, 6.7 intro.
- court officers, 2.4.58
- court party (British), 3.9.40, 5.9.9
- Court of Requests (Great Britain), 2.9.100
- courts
  - accessibility of, 2.8.16
  - enlargement of jurisdiction by, 2.8.224, 6.13.24
  - in Massachusetts, 4.6.8
  - resentment against, vol. 4 intro.
  - See also* judiciary
- courts, federal
  - amendment to limit jurisdiction of, 5.4.6
  - under Confederation, 2.8.185
  - debtors and, 5.16.24
  - inconvenience of using, 2.7.46
  - and independence of states, 2.9.7
  - James Monroe on, 5.21.35
  - not bound by local laws, 4.6.19
  - original jurisdiction of, 5.1.89
  - powers of, 4.6.23
  - rules governing, 4.6.19, 4.6.23
  - transfer of cases to, 5.1n59
- courts, state
  - amendments to protect, 5.9.14–15
  - under Confederation, 2.8.185
  - impartiality of, 4.9.17
  - independence of, destroyed, 5.7.7
  - jurisdiction in revenue cases, 5.4.6
- [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.89
- transfer of cases from, 5.1n59
- courts-martial, 2.8.113, 2.8.200
- Coxe, Tench, 1.6, 2.5n6, 3.14 intro.
  - author of *American Citizen* essays, 2.6n19
  - author of *Freeman Essays*, 2.7n84, 3.13 intro. n1
  - Examination of the Constitution*, 3.8n8
- Coxe, William, 5.1.78, 5.1.99
- credit
  - of state governments, 2.8.2
  - state policies on, 2.8.221
- credit, bills of, 6.10.4
  - under Confederation, 4.6.75
  - congressional control of, 2.4.75, 2.9.5
  - depreciation of, 2.7.79
  - reserved to Congress only, 2.4.57, 3.14.12
  - states forbidden to emit, 3.13.5
  - See also* money, paper
- credit, public
  - and payment of interest on national debt, 6.1.47
  - restoration of, 2.4.75, 4.9.26
  - Sidney on, 6.8.27–28
  - stagnation of, 2.8.206
- creditors
  - laws injurious to, 4.6.10
  - money owed to, by states, 2.9.162–66
  - oppression of industrious debtors by, 2.4.77
  - and paper money laws, 2.8.6
  - security for, 2.8.61
  - unfair treatment of, by states, 2.9.180–82
- creditors, foreign, 2.5.29, 4.9.17, 4.18.2, 4.25.2
- creditors, public
  - demands of, on new government, 6.1.48
  - government's inability to pay, 2.7.53
  - [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.56
  - reasons of, for complaint, 4.6.10
- criminal cases
  - congressional legislation on, 5.16.36
  - effect of Constitution on, 4.6.21

- criminal cases (*continued*)  
 federal jurisdiction in, 2.4.92  
 rights of accused in, 3.11.13,  
 5.14.10  
 and Supreme Court, 2.9.170  
 and trial by jury, 2.7.43, 4.17.22  
 critical period, 1.26, 1.87n11,  
 1.87n15, 2.7.91, 2.7n45, 2.8.3,  
 2.8n4, 2.9.2, 3.9.17, 6.11.25  
 Cromwell, Nathan, 5.4.11, 5.4.13  
 Cromwell, Oliver, 6.14.123  
 Denatus on, 5.18.13  
 dissolution of Parliament by,  
 5.1.73, 5.10.2  
 example of tyrant, 2.7.108  
 kingly power of, 3.4.4  
 Newport Man on, 4.25.3  
 use of army by, 2.9.117  
 cross-examination, 2.8.53, 2.9.177  
 Crosskey, William W., 2.8 intro.,  
 4.1 intro.  
 crown lands, 2.4.107  
 Cumberland County, Pennsylvania,  
 2.7.184, 3.9.32  
*Cumberland Gazette*, 4.16  
 currency  
 circulation of, 4.9.6  
 depreciated, 5.16.24  
 scarcity of, vol. 4 intro.  
 Curtis, George Ticknor, 2.2 intro.,  
 vol. 5 pt. 2 intro., 5.16 intro.  
 Customer (pseud.), 4.16  
 customs officers, 5.1.13  
 Cybles. *See* Sibyl
- Daily Advertiser* (New York),  
 3.3n17, 3.11 intro. n1, 6.6.51  
*Daily Patriotic Register*, 6.5.1  
 Dana, Francis, 4.13.6  
 Dauphin County, Pennsylvania,  
 2.7.184, 3.2.3  
 David, King, 5.1.102  
 David (pseud.), 4.24  
 Dawes, Thomas, 4.26n9  
 debate, freedom of, 4.9.42, 4.13.13  
 debt  
 accumulation of, 6.14.17–19  
 arrest of federal officers for, 3.4.3  
 cases of, involving an ambassador,  
 2.9.169  
 in cases of libel, 3.11.41  
 caused by imported luxuries,  
 2.7.103  
 Constitution no cure for, 4.23.3(4)  
 effect of Constitution on, 5.16.10  
 imprisonment for, 5.2.4  
*See also* debts  
 debt, domestic  
 miscalculation of, 3.11.2  
 payment of, by states, 3.14.11  
 payment of interest on, in paper,  
 6.1.47  
 debt, foreign, 2.4.45, 4.25.2, 6.11.6  
 danger of war and, 4.17.7  
 government's inability to pay  
 interest on, 3.10.6  
 payment of, in gold and silver,  
 4.9.30  
 debt, national, 2.9.81  
 Cincinnatus on, 6.1.41  
 effect of Constitution on, 4.3.4  
 Friend to the Rights of the People  
 on, 4.23.3(3)  
 increase in, 2.5.28  
 payment of, by Congress, 3.16.17  
 payment of, from impost reve-  
 nues, 4.3.20, 5.3.16  
 Pennsylvania's contribution to  
 payment of, 3.9.84  
 plan for payment of, 2.9.89  
 problem of providing for, 3.9.47  
 responsibility of federal govern-  
 ment, 2.7n30, 2.9.63  
 state contributions toward, 4.9.22  
 debt, public, 3.3.16, 3.16.19  
 delays in payment of, 4.6.10  
 opposing views on, 5.1.54  
 payment of interest on, 2.8.2,  
 6.3.10  
 public's right to information on,  
 4.2.7  
 debtors  
 differences in state policies on,  
 2.8.221  
 favored by state governments,  
 2.9.180–82  
 and federal courts, 5.16.24  
 grievances of in Massachusetts,  
 2.9.176  
 laws favoring, 4.6.10  
 property of, 2.8.40  
 relief of, 2.4.77  
 debts  
 authority of legislature to con-  
 tract, 2.9.5  
 cancellation of, 2.7.167, 5.1.30

## Index

- debts (*continued*)
  - liquidation of, by time and industry, 4.28.8
  - payment of, forced by Constitution, 5.12.1
  - states unable to compel payment of, 3.13.5
  - to and from Union, 2.8.229
- debts, municipal, 4.6.33
- debts, state, 2.7 intro., 2.8.39, 2.8.209, 2.9.63, 4.1.3
  - incorporation of, into national debt, 4.6.33
  - nonpayment of interest on, 4.9.32
  - owed to individuals, 2.9.162
  - payment of, by state resources, 4.6.33
- Decalogue, 4.9.9, 4.12.5
- Decemviri, 3.3.51, 6.1.27
- Declaration of Independence
  - Anti-Federalist appeals to, 1.7
  - Constitution contrasted with, 5.9.16
  - Countryman on, 6.7.6
  - Elbridge Gerry and, 2.1 intro. n2
  - Mercy Warren on, 6.14.11–13
  - model for American government, 5.9.1
  - not unanimously approved, 3.9.56
  - Rawlins Lowndes and, 5.12.1
  - Samuel Chase and, 5.3 intro.
- Declaratory Act (1766), binding force of Parliamentary Laws, 3.3.12, 3.16.16n, 3.16n10, 5.9n2
- declaratory articles (bill of rights), 2.8.197
- defaulters, 4.13.28
- Defence of the Constitutions of Government of the United States*, 2.4n9, 2.7n3, 6.14.108
- defense, national, 5.3.10
  - under Confederation, 4.2.8
  - expense of, 2.9.90
  - Federalist emphasis on, 1.30–31
  - and formation of government, 2.9.4
  - and partial confederacies, 2.5.28
  - responsibility for, shared by states, 2.9.86
- Deists, 4.23.3(9)
- Deity, 3.16.15, 4.18.2. *See also* God
- Delaware
  - compact population of, 2.8.114
  - instructions of, to Convention delegates, 2.4.13
  - and New Jersey Resolutions, 2.4.21
  - religious restrictions in, 3.12.18
  - representation of, 2.4.45, 2.8.99, 4.5.2, 4.14.2
  - seduction of, by hope of gain, 4.28.10
  - small state, 2.4.31
- Delaware convention, 4.12.8
- Delaware Indians, 5.1.47
- Delaware Senate, 2.8.89
- Delegate Who Has Caught Cold (pseud.), 5.19
  - ratification recommended by, 5.19.2
- delegation, all governmental power derived from, 5.13.2
- deliberation, wise, 1.61
- Deliberator (pseud.), 3.13
- DeLolme (De Lome), Jean Louis
  - on British constitution, 2.8.102, 2.8.105, 2.8.109, 5.1.75
  - on division of executive power, 6.1.33
  - on freedom of press, 2.8.203
  - Federal Farmer's use of his writings, 2.8nn67–68
  - on general verdicts, 2.8.190
  - on judiciary, 5.1.66
  - on legislative abuses, 5.21n11
  - on separation of powers, 6.1.33
- demagoguery, 3.9.31
  - Cato accused of, 2.6n4
  - Centinel accused of, 2.8n73
- demagogues, 2.8.113
- democracy (form of government)
  - correspondence of, to one aspect of human nature, 5.18.6
  - Federalist opposition to, 1.39
  - Federalist views of, 1.90n19
  - laws of, distinguished from those of other governments, 4.21.1
  - imperiled when representatives are chosen by plurality, 2.8.154
  - [Pennsylvania] Farmer on, 3.14.2
  - unsuitability of, to large territory, 2.7.17, 2.9.13
  - William Penn on, 3.12.11–19
- democracy (common people), 2.8.97
  - conflict of, with aristocracy, 5.1.30

- democracy (*continued*)
  - humiliation of, by Senate, 6.1.29
  - underrepresentation of, in small legislature, 2.8.113
  - weakness and confusion of, 6.8.14–15
- Democratic Federalist (pseud.), 3.5; 3.6.7, 6.1 intro.
- democrats
  - Anti-Federalists as, 1.40
  - [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.58
- Demosthenes, 2.6.48, 5.1.21
- Denatus (pseud.), 5.18
  - conditional ratification recommended by, 5.18.14, 5.18.15
- Denmark
  - absolutism in, 2.8.178
  - judicial abuses in, 5.1.67
  - surrender of liberties by, 5.1.36, 5.1.49
  - union of executive and senate in, 5.1.31
- DePauw, Linda Grant, 2.6 intro., 2.9 intro., 6.7 intro. n1, 6.8 intro., 6.9 intro.
- depression, economic, 2.8.206, vol. 4 intro.
- Descartes, René, 5.18.17
- despotism (despotic government), 2.9.13
  - alternative to anarchy, 2.7 intro.
  - alternative to war, 2.7.142
  - deceptively gentle foundations of, 3.6.52
  - compatibility of, with republican forms, 5.14.4, 5.14.20
  - correspondence of, to one aspect of human nature, 5.18.6
  - establishment of, by new Constitution, 3.3.20, 4.26.6
  - falsely distinguished from arbitrary government, 5.14.18
  - and fear, 4.13.21
  - hereditary, 2.7.122
  - John Locke on origin of, 2.6.14
  - in large countries, 2.7.18, 2.7.94
  - Poplicola on, 4.11.2
  - possible weakness of, 4.10.15
  - support for, 2.8.3
  - Thomas McKean on, 1.51, 4.11.2, 4.13.21
  - uncertain nature of, 4.6.50
  - weakening of national character by, 3.9.26
  - wise administration of, 4.11.2
- despotism, Roman, 2.9.117
- despots
  - alleged wisdom of, 4.11.2
  - representation of people by, 5.5.6
- DeWitt, Jan (Dutch leader), 6.8.11
- DeWitt, John (pseud.), 4.3; 4.22 intro.
- Deye, Thomas Cockey, 2.4.1
- Diamond, Martin, 2.8n9
- Dickinson, John
  - Countryman's imitation of, 6.7 intro.
- Fabius, 1.90n20
- Farmer's Letters*, 2.7.33
- inconsistency of, 6.6.8–11
- on jealousy of liberty, 2.8.58
- revolutionary principles of, 6.14.7
- on subversion of colonial legislatures, 2.7.40
- dictatorship
  - American, 1.49, 5.16.11
  - Roman, 2.7.67, 2.8.178, 5.10.2, 6.13.34
- Digby, Lord George, 2.7.112
- Dionysius of Syracuse, 4.3.29
- diplomatic immunity, 2.9.168–69
- diplomatic service, litigation involving, 2.4.89
- discipline, military, 5.14.8
- discretionary power, 2.9.89
- discussion, free
  - attempts to inhibit, 2.6.9, 2.7.150, 3.9.54, 4.3.25
  - promotion of, by free press, 4.3.10
- disorders, people's weariness with, 2.8.1
- dispensing act, 5.12.3
- dissention, civil, 3.6.3, 4.3.2. *See also* civil war
- District of Columbia. *See* federal city
- distrust of government, benefits of, 2.6.48. *See also* jealousy
- diversity, necessity of, to a confederacy, 5.1n35
- divide et impera* (divide and govern)
  - Federalist application of, 1.47
  - maxim of princes, 3.12.13
- divines. *See* clergy; ministers
- dockyards, federal, 2.8.222–23

- doctors, at federal convention, 2.7.166
- doge, Venetian, 3.6.38, 5.1.25
- domestic affairs
  - primary concern of people, 2.9.81, 2.9.86
  - of states, 4.3.11
- domestic employments, in ancient Greece and Rome, 4.6.6, 4.6.49
- domestic tranquillity, 2.9.151, 5.14.44
- domination, desire for, 2.7.105, 2.7.110, 5.14.14
- Domitian, Emperor, 2.6.34, 3.10.1, 5.1.96, 5.1.103
- Don Quixote, 4.17.19, 4.28.1
- Draconian code, 4.12.1
- drunkenness, 1.3n49
- Dudley, Edmund, 3.3.16
- due process. *See* accused, rights of
- Dutch revolt, 6.8.14
- dynasty building, 2.8.178
- eastern states
  - appeals to higher courts in, 2.9.176
  - control of carrying trade by, 5.12.2
  - democratic character of, 2.8.26
  - favored by trade regulation, 2.8.61
  - and slavery controversy, 2.4.67
  - reimbursement of, for war expenses, 5.12.4
  - sufferings of, during Revolution, 5.12.4, 5.12n4
  - See also* New England
- East India Company, 5.12.1
- East Indies, 4.6.25
- ecclesiastical courts
  - examination of witnesses in, 6.1.19
  - juries excluded from, 2.8.191
- economy
  - example of, by Congress, 4.10.8
  - imposition of, on federal government, 3.3.38
  - misuse of word, 3.15.1
  - penalization of, 4.5.2
- economy, domestic, 4.1.2, 5.1.82, 5.16.10
- Edgar, James, 3.11.56
- education, 1.21
- Charles Turner on, 4.18.2
- civic, 1.21
- concern for, in New England, 4.6.48
- Denatus on, 5.18.9–12
- effect of, on human behavior, 4.3.17
- importance of, in America, 4.3.1
- for judges and senators, 2.8.54
- and national strength, 5.18.12
- promotion of liberty by, 2.8.196
- religious, 4.24.3
- Edward III (England), 6.8.39
- Edward VI, 5.1.41
- efficiency, ultimate purpose of, 3.9.20
- Egypt, 4.6.68
  - plagues of, 4.7.4
- elections, 5.6.5, 6.10.3, 6.13.20
  - congressional control over, 2.6.46–47, 2.7.73–74, 2.9.51, 3.8.3, 3.16.4, 4.2.4, 4.6.60, 4.10.10, 4.13.28; argument for, 2.8.162; Brutus [Virginia] on, 5.15.1; Cincinnatus on, 6.1.53–55; Farmer and Planter on, 5.2.2; limitation of, 4.15.4, 5.4.7; Patrick Henry on, 5.16.8; Plebeian on, 6.11.16; Republican on, 5.13.14; Sidney on, 6.9.16, 6.9.21; use of for political advantage, 4.18.1
  - constitutional provision for, 3.9.63
  - control of, taken from the people, 4.13.28
  - Countryman on, 6.7.4
  - determination of, by elites, 5.14.31
  - efforts to prevent federal interference in, 3.11.26, 4.6.75, 4.15.4
  - fixed basis for, 2.9.52
  - future abolition of, 3.9.63
  - impartiality and security of, 2.8.148–65
  - inconvenient locations of, 4.4.6
  - mode of, 3.16.5, 4.6.72
  - nature and consequences of, 5.10.2
  - possible state neglect of, 4.4.3
  - postponement of, by Congress, 2.7.100

- elections (*continued*)
  - reasons for postponing, 3.11.25
  - reasons for relocating, 4.10.10
  - in state constitutions, 6.1.54
  - states' loss of control over, 2.8.161, 3.14.18
  - time of, 2.8.181, 3.11.25
  - times, places, and manner of, 4.4.2–3
- elections, annual, 3.8.3, 3.16.4
  - abolition of, 4.3.9
  - in ancient Rome, 5.10.2
  - Cato on, 2.6.35–37
  - Consider Arms et al. on, 4.26.5
  - Cornelius on, 4.10.6
  - of federal representatives, 4.13.5
  - Friend to the Rights of the People on, 4.23.3(1)
  - for New Hampshire General Court, 4.23.3(3)
  - for old Congress, 2.8.147, 4.4.38
  - safeguard of democracy, 4.3.14
  - Thomas Hutchinson's opposition to, 4.28.4
  - Watchman on, 4.22.4
- elections, biennial, 2.6.35, 3.16.4, 4.13.28, 4.26.5
- elections, British, 4.6.43, 4.6.59, 5.16.27
- elections, congressional, 2.8.158, 5.3.17, 5.16.8
- elections, democratic, Federalist
  - abhorrence of, 3.16.3
- elections, district, 2.8.151
- elections, federal, 3.11.13
- elections, free, 2.9.30
- elections, location of
  - congressional power to alter, 3.16.4, 4.23.3(2), 5.9.5
  - influence of, on outcome, 2.9.52
  - reason for constitutional provision on, 4.23.3(3)
  - William Symmes on, 4.5.7
- elections, presidential
  - congressional power to delay, 4.16.2
  - James Monroe on, 5.21.25, 5.21.34
  - Republicus on, 5.13.14
  - Samuel Chase on, 5.3.17
  - vagueness of Constitution on, 2.6.24
- elections, senatorial, 2.8.147, 3.6.16, 4.3.12
- electoral college, 3.16.15
- electoral districts, 2.8.25, 2.9.52
- electoral system, defects of, 2.8.25
- electoral votes, 2.4.83
- electors
  - disqualification of, by states, 4.13.29
  - qualifications of, 2.8.149–50, 2.8.165, 4.13.26
  - relationship of, with elected officials, 5.16.27
  - rights of, fettered, 4.2.3
- electors, presidential
  - Candidus on, 4.9.11
  - Cato on, 2.6.47
  - choice of, by state legislatures, 2.7.100, 2.8.214
  - proposal to increase number of, 5.9.9
  - Republican Federalist on, 4.13.13
  - unfamiliarity of, with candidates, 5.13.13
- Eliagabalus, Emperor, 5.1.106
- Elihu (pseud.), 1.22, 4.24.1, 4.24n1
- Elisha (prophet), 2.9.54
- elites, determination of elections by, 5.14.31
- Elizabeth I (England), 5.1.41
- Ellsworth, Oliver, 3.3n33, 3.3n35
  - and committee on salaries, 4.17n6
  - on divided sovereignty, 1.34
  - on impost revenues, 6.11n19
- Landholder, 2.1 intro., 2.8 intro. n15
- Landowner, 2.4 intro.
- on superior form of government, 1.99n2
- on union with South, 4.26n12
- emigration
  - from Great Britain, 5.1.75
  - among states, 2.4.36
- empire
  - establishment of, by new Constitution, 4.3.11
  - Patrick Henry on temptations of, 5.16.2
  - Shaftesbury on, 3.10.8
- Empson, Richard, 3.3.16
- energy, governmental, 3.9.98, 3.16.13, 4.9.18, 4.26.2
- England
  - geography of, 2.8.103, 2.8.108

## Index

### England (*continued*)

illusion of liberty in, 4.25.3  
jury system in, 5.1.67, 3.3.53  
mixed government of, 4.11.4  
monarchy in, 5.16.2  
parliamentary check in, 6.8.39  
representation in, 2.8.97, 5.16.8  
standing armies in, 4.3.29  
union of, with Scotland, 5.16.25,  
6.4.1–3  
*See also* Great Britain  
English history, [Maryland] Farmer  
on, 5.1.41  
Englishmen  
inability of, to bring suit against  
Scots, 5.15.1  
rights of, 5.16.24, 6.14.9  
Enlightenment, European, 6.14.162  
enlistment, voluntary, 2.9.96  
entailments, 3.6n10  
enterprise, free, 4.6.62  
enthusiasm, 3.3.27  
entry, right of, 4.3.15, 4.3.21  
enumeration, 1.98n30, 4.14.1–2,  
5.21n8  
ephori, 2.8.97, 2.8.106  
Episcopal church, 5.8 intro., 5.8.5  
equality  
American civil associations  
founded on, 4.3.1  
impossibility of, in large re-  
publics, 3.14.9  
Massachusetts Constitution and,  
4.26.13, 4.26n11  
natural right of, 2.6.11  
in northern states, 4.6.48  
Republicus on, 5.13.2  
in state of nature, 2.4.29  
equality, federal, 2.4.26  
equality, law of, 5.1.93  
equality, republican, 2.8.138  
equilibrium, between federal and  
state power, 5.14.13  
equity  
and Anglo-American jurispru-  
dence, 3.5.6  
Grotius on, 2.9.138  
meaninglessness of, without law,  
2.8.42, 3.5.6  
meaning of, in proposed Con-  
stitution, 2.8.195, 2.9.137  
Pennsylvania Convention Minority  
on, 3.11.39

and treaties, 2.9.160  
equity, court of  
and consolidation of states,  
3.11.29  
suits in, 2.7.41, 3.5.5  
error, writs of, 2.9.175, 2.9.183  
essences, confusion of names with,  
5.14.20  
estates, personal. *See* property, pri-  
vate  
estates of the Kingdom (Great Brit-  
ain), 2.4.50, 2.4.54  
ethics, social harmony promoted by,  
5.8.5  
Etting Collection, 5.5 intro.  
Europe  
admiration for state constitutions  
in, 3.10.4  
American exports to, 3.3.32  
America's friends in, 3.9.14  
benefits of division of, 5.1.109  
contrast of, with America, 6.8.18  
difficulty of reform in, 5.19.12  
distance of United States from,  
2.4.34  
distracted state of, 2.7.26, 3.16.3  
exclusive charters in, 4.6.63  
extinction of liberty in, 5.1.33  
government protection of religion  
in, 4.24.3  
interruption of trade with, 4.2.2–3  
miserable condition of poor in,  
3.9.35  
respect of, for United States,  
5.16.2  
European courts, example of, to  
Congress, 4.23.3(3)  
European dynasties, 5.1.25  
European governments,  
formation of, 2.6.13  
intrigues of, in America, 4.13.26  
militaristic nature of, 2.9.87  
ministerial powers in, 3.14.17  
Senate exposed to influence of,  
3.8.3  
European nations  
alliances of with United States,  
4.12.10  
duties of, on American products,  
4.9.13  
error of imitating example of,  
6.14.15  
possibility of war with, 2.9.90

- European nations (*continued*)  
 standing armies in, 2.9.17, 2.9.99  
 United States economic pressure on, 4.9.35  
 United States relations with, 4.6.46  
 European quarrels, American involvement in, 4.6.59  
 evidence, legal. *See* testimony, legal  
 evils  
 choice of, facing state conventions, 2.8.70  
 government a choice among, 5.16.3  
 Examiner (pseud.), 4.4  
 on Articles of Confederation, 4.4n5  
 on people's right to alter constitutions, 4.4n7  
 reply of, to Vox Populi, 4.4 intro. n1  
 Vox Populi's reply to, 4.4.9–21  
 exchange, bills of, 4.3.9  
 Exchequer, Court of, 6.13.24  
 growth of its jurisdiction, 2.9.143  
 jury trials and, 2.7.41  
 use of legal fictions by, 2.8.224  
 excise, 2.4.55–56, 2.8.36, 4.5.2  
 Countryman on, 6.7.7  
 novelty of, in America, 5.2.2  
 power of, 3.14.11, 4.6.76  
 Robert Morris and, 6.1.45  
 excise, federal, 4.6.75, 4.9.31–32  
 excise laws, 5.7.5, 5.14.7, 6.2.2  
 excise officers  
 creation of, by new Constitution, 4.3.31  
 duplication of, 3.3.33  
 search and seizure by, 5.2.2  
 violation of homes by, 5.7.9  
 executive  
 basis of good government, 5.21.24  
 control of, by one man, 2.8.177, 3.9.81, 4.5.2  
 Elbridge Gerry on, 2.1.2  
 Henry Clay on, 1.6n28  
 in large republic, 2.9.20  
 legislative powers of, 2.9.203  
 power of, shared with legislature, 3.12.14, 4.3.12, 4.28.4  
 representation of the people by, 5.13.2  
 in representative government, 5.1.71  
 role of, in legislative process, 5.1.81  
 Sidney on, 6.8.1–2  
 executive, federal, 2.4.80–88  
 under Confederation, 2.5.9  
 connection of, with Senate, 2.2.4, 2.2.8  
 limitations on, 5.1n4  
 and national defense, 2.8.208  
 role of, in legislation, 2.8.175  
 strengthening of, 2.8.173  
 veto power of, 5.21.22  
 in Virginia Plan, 2.4.16  
 executive, independent, 5.1.31  
 executive, plural, vol. 3 intro., 4.10n5  
 executive branches, two, 3.5.13  
 executive council, 2.8.170–72, 2.8.178, 3.6.40. *See also* presidential council  
 executive councils, state, 2.8.91  
 executive departments, heads of, 2.8.147  
 executive officers, oath of, to support federal Constitution, 2.9.31, 4.4.34, 4.4.36  
 executive power  
 Anti-Federalist ideas on, 1.49–50  
 combination of, with legislative and judicial powers, 6.1.26  
 division of, in new Constitution, 6.1.33  
 enlargement of, by Senate, 6.1.32  
 evils of combining with legislative, 2.5.22, 3.5.13, 5.15.1  
 in Great Britain, 2.8.104  
 limitation of, by legislative, 5.13.5  
 not suitable for Congress, 2.5.22  
 Samuel Chase on, 5.3.13  
 in state constitutions, 2.8.91, 6.1.31  
 vagueness of, in new Constitution, 2.6.24  
 expediency, proposed government based on, 6.13.38  
 expenditures, federal  
 account of, by Congress, 4.22.4, 4.23.3(3)  
 increase of, 3.6.17  
 publication of, 4.9.22, 5.16.8, 5.16.14  
 export duties, 2.4.55, 2.4.79, 2.9.92, 3.6.31



## Index

- exports, U.S., carried by foreign ships, 3.3.32
- ex post facto clause, 2.7 intro., 2.7.167, 2.8.199
  - Centinel on, 3.9n35
  - Countryman on, 6.7.13
  - purpose of, exposed, 3.16.18
- ex post facto laws, 6.13.5
  - and common law, 2.8.200
  - in federal and state constitutions, 2.8.51
  - George Mason on, 2.2.14
  - and paper money problem, 5.16.39
  - states inhibited from passing, 4.9.22
  - in Virginia, 5.16.5
- extravagance
  - and economic distress, 4.9.18
  - ruinous effects of, 4.23.3(3)
- Fabius (John Dickinson), on licentiousness of people, 1.90n20
- Fabius (George Washington), proposal of, as president, 2.6.7, 2.6.9, 2.6n4
- Fabricius, G. Luscinius, 4.25.3
- fact, matters of
  - appellate jurisdiction in, 2.9.175, 3.11.38–39
  - in federal cases, 2.4.92, 2.4.94
  - reservation of, solely for juries, 4.15.4
- factions
  - avoidance of, 2.8.147, 5.9.4
  - creation of instability by, 5.10.2
  - and frequent changes in government, 4.15.6
  - in imperial governments, 3.10.8
  - influence of, during Revolution, 2.8.117
  - interference of with state representation, 2.7.100
  - James Madison on, 5.16n5
  - in state government, 2.5.14
  - William Symmes on, 4.5.11
  - See also* juntas; parties
- factions, aristocratic, 2.8.97
- factions, majority, 1.41, 1.68
- families
  - aggrandizement of, 2.8.179, 4.26.7
  - control of presidency by, 2.8.178, 5.2.3
  - dangerous combinations of, 3.6n10
- Farmer (pseud.). *See* [Maryland] Farmer; [New Hampshire] Farmer; [Pennsylvania] Farmer
- Farmer and Planter (pseud.), 5.2
- farmer general, 2.9.69
- farmers
  - depressed state of, 4.9.34
  - distress of, 6.14.17
  - impost no advantage to, 4.6.28
  - unlikely to be elected as representatives, 2.9.42
- Farmers (Swedish social order), 5.1.35
- Farmer's Letters* (John Dickinson), 2.7.33, 2.7.36
- farmers and mechanics, representation for, 2.8.15
- Farnese (Farneza), Alessandro, 5.1.47
- fasts, legislation of by government, 4.24.4
- Fayette County, Pennsylvania, 2.7.184
- fear
  - danger of, in politics, 3.3.4
  - and despotism, 4.13.21
  - of government, in republics, 2.9.18
- federal (word)
  - ambiguity of, 1.9, 1.32
  - use of, to deceive people, 3.16.17n
- federal city (District of Columbia, ten-mile district), 2.6.27, 2.8.214, 2.8.228
  - attraction of strangers to, 4.28.10
  - commerce of, 4.6.11
  - congressional control of, 4.8.1
  - danger to republicanism in, 2.8.222–23
  - expense of, 4.9.32
- Friend to the Rights of the People on, 4.23.3(4)
- James Wilson on, 6.1n9
- [New Hampshire] Farmer on, 4.17.3
- possibility of elections being moved to, 4.6.60
- proposal to reduce size of, 5.9.7
- refuge for wellborn bankrupts, 5.2.3

- federal city (*continued*)
  - 3.16.2
  - residence of senators in, 2.9.200
  - revenue transmitted to, 4.28.1
  - sanctuary for criminals, 4.28.8
  - subjection of nation to, 4.12.10
  - taxation of, 2.8.226
  - trials in, 5.7.7
  - William Symmes on, 4.5.2
- federal convention. *See* Constitutional Convention, federal
- federal districts, 5.16.2
  - exclusion of state laws from, 2.8.223–24
  - use of, to expand federal power, 2.8.224
- federal establishment, taxes to support, 3.3.33
- Federal Farmer (pseud.), 2.8; 1.41, 1.93n6, 2.2n1
  - authorship of letters of, 2.8 intro.
  - on bills of rights, 1.70
  - Brutus and, 2.9n2
  - Countryman on, 6.6.39–47
  - on federal legislature, 1.58–59
  - on Framers, 2.7n2
  - on government's duty to encourage best in people, 1.19
  - on happiness of people, 1.31
  - on judiciary, 1.50
  - on jury trial, 3.5 intro.
  - on people's confidence in their government, 1.16
  - on presidency, 1.49
  - Publius on, 2.8n33
  - on representation, 3.4 intro.
  - on Senate, 1.96n29
  - shift of, from old to new federalism, 1.33
  - theoretical importance of, 1.6
- federal government
  - ability of, to attend to local concern, 3.2.7
  - additional powers required for, 2.7.79
  - annual expenses of, 4.2.7
  - authority of, distinguished from that of states, 3.14.8, 5.17.1
  - balance of, with state governments, 1.32, 5.21.17
  - control of, by natural aristocracy, 2.8.129
  - and control of elections, 4.4.3
  - inability of, to raise a navy, 3.9.29
  - interests of, discordant with those of states, 6.13.11–13
  - James Monroe on, 5.21.18–35
  - judge of its own acts, 2.9.78
  - lavish spending habits of, 3.3.38
  - Luther Martin on, 2.4.29
  - necessity of, 2.8.1
  - organization of, 2.8.25–34
  - principles of, 3.12.1
  - Publius on, 2.9n56
  - purposes of, 5.3.17
  - reform of, 3.1n3
  - rivalry of, with states, 3.3.37
  - states constituent elements of, 2.4.39–40
- federal government
  - states sufficient check on, 2.4.38
  - and state taxes, 3.11.13
  - taxing powers of, 2.9.63
  - tax policy of, 5.1.59
  - unequal authority of, in different states, 4.1.3
  - unpredictability of its future actions, 3.3.34
- federal government, new
  - balance of, threatened by presidency, 5.14.39
  - bureaucracy under, 5.2.4
  - combination of national and federal features in, 5.16.22
  - complex nature of, 4.13.3
  - constitutional limitations on, 6.13.34
  - demands of public creditors on, 6.1.48
  - excessive promises of, 6.1.47–48
  - expense of, 3.8.3, 5.3.17, 6.10.9, 6.10.12
  - inability of people to support, 4.9.34
  - inadequate representation under, 4.3.19
  - increased powers of, 3.14.11
  - indefiniteness of its powers, 3.6.19
  - infinite power of, 2.7.160, 5.16.19
  - instability predicted for, 6.7.8
  - lack of balance in, 4.3.19
  - likely changes in control of, 3.3.51
  - not a confederation, 2.9.5
  - Patrick Henry on, 5.16.6

## Index

- federal government, new (*cont.*)
  - powers of, dangerous to liberty, 2.9.48
  - and standing army, 3.9.45
  - tax increases under, 5.2.4, 6.11.23
  - taxing power of, 2.9.63
  - unanimous consent of states
    - needed for, 6.13.38, 6.13.40
  - vigilance of, against change, 4.3.18
- federal government, old
  - absence of internal checks and separation of powers in, 1.54
  - bankruptcy of, 5.7.4
  - insolvency of, 3.10.6, 3.11.3
  - powerlessness of, 2.4.32
  - powers of, 5.21.5
  - state support of, 5.14.44
  - See also* Confederation
- federal head, responsibility of, for common defense, 2.8.208
- federalism
  - Anti-Federalist appeal to, 1.7
  - embodiment of, in Articles of Confederation, 1.9
  - Luther Martin's definition of, 2.4.27
  - threatened by national government, 2.1.4–5
- federalism, dual, 5.21 intro., 5.21.17
- Federalism, New, 1.33–34, 1.36–38, 1.88n55
- federalist (name)
  - Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.25–26
  - inaccuracy of, 6.7.4, 3.15.2
  - Luther Martin on, 2.4.43
  - meanings of, 2.8.72
  - Melancton Smith on, 6.12.5
  - origin of, 1.9–10
  - Sidney on, 6.8.3
- Federalist (pseud.), 4.7; 2.8n28, 2.8n73
- Federalist, The*
  - counterpart of Centinel essays, 2.7 intro.
  - Impartial Examiner's reply to, 5.14n3
  - reply to Cato, 2.6 intro.
  - Robert Livingston and, 6.12n3
  - no. 5, 6.4
  - no. 9, 2.6n11
  - no. 10, 1.92n49, 2.9n10, 3.8n4, 3.10n3, 5.8 intro.
  - no. 15, 1.82n34, 5.20.3
  - no. 23, 2.9.79–80, 2.9.85–86
  - no. 24, 2.9.111–12
  - no. 25, 2.9.127–29
  - no. 30, 2.9n7
  - no. 31, 2.9n42
  - no. 38 (39), 6.6.46, 6.6n21
  - no. 39, 1.82n38
  - no. 49, 1.74
  - no. 55, 1.72
  - no. 67, 2.6n26
  - no. 69, 2.6n20, 5.11 intro.
- Federalist authors, reasons of, for concealing their identity, 3.9.2
- Federalist delegates, past misdeeds of, exposed, 2.8.73
- Federalist pamphlets, Luther Martin's criticisms of, 2.4.5
- Federalist junto, 3.9.47
- Federalist propaganda, 2.7.138
- Federalist strategy, 2.8.69
- Federalists
  - and abolition of state governments, 2.9.194
  - Aristocrotis on, 3.16.17
  - attempts of, to stifle press, 2.7 intro., 3.9.7, 3.9.55
  - attitude of, toward slavery, 1.100n20
  - Beardian view of, 1.3–4
  - Cincinnatus on, 6.1.51
  - confidence of, in rulers, 1.50–51
  - contempt of, for common people, 4.12.10
  - degree of agreement among, 1.5–6
  - desire of, for national glory, 5.16n11
  - distrust of people's judgment, 3.3.44
  - emphasis of, on administration, 4.11.1
  - equation of limited government with weak government, 5.14.20
  - inconstancy of, 6.11.27
  - lukewarm supporters of Revolution, 2.7.116
  - in Maryland, vol. 5 intro., 5.4.3
  - at Massachusetts Convention, vol. 4 intro., 4.13.24
  - monopoly of newspapers by, 4.3.10
  - in New York, vol. 6, pt. 1, intro.

Federalists (*continued*)

openness of, 3.9n1  
 opposition of, to bill of rights, 3.9.43  
 in Pennsylvania delegation to Constitutional Convention, 3.2.2  
 points of agreement with Anti-Federalists, 1.5–6  
 possibility of ultimate agreement with Anti-Federalists, 3.3.45  
 reliance of, on virtue of rulers, 3.3.50–51, 4.6.71  
 self-interested motives of, 3.9.19  
 and separate confederacies, 1.86n2  
 and standing armies, 2.9.110  
 views of, on democracy, 1.90n19  
 views of, on representation, 1.43–45  
 federalists, pretended, 2.8.72, 2.8n9  
 federal offices, increase of, 2.4.47, 2.4.118, 2.7.52, 3.6.17, 3.11.55, 4.3.23, 6.3.12  
 federal officials (officers)  
   appointment of, 2.8.147, 5.6.5  
   excessive salaries of, 4.17.5  
   influence of, in elections, 4.3.31, 4.13.29  
   and litigation in state courts, 5.1.89  
   multiplication of, 2.8.169, 4.6.45, 4.9.37  
   relation of, to state officials, 6.12.31  
   servants of president and senate, 4.13.29  
   state power over, 4.6.75  
   violation of rights by, 3.5.9  
 federal officials, inferior, 5.9.10  
 Federal Republican (*pseud.*), 3.6; 2.4n24  
 fee simple, 3.6n10  
 feigned issue, 3.5.5  
 feudal system  
   instability of, 4.6.50  
   [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.107  
 Field, Samuel. *See* Consider Arms et al.  
 Filmer, Sir Robert, 5.1.5, 5.1n4  
 Financier, The (Robert Morris), 2.7.168  
 Findley, William, 3.1

Anti-Federalist politician, 2.7.152, 2.7.158  
 debate of, with Wilson and McKean, 4.6.57  
 Helvidius Priscus on, 4.12.6  
 Officer of the Late Continental Army, 3.8  
 Pennsylvania Convention Minority, 3.11.56  
 plea of, to delay consideration of Constitution, 3.1.3  
 refusal of, to attend Constitutional Convention, 3.2n1  
 fines  
   excessive, 2.7.55, 2.9.28, 3.11.13, 5.6.5, 5.14.10  
   imposition of, on delinquent states, 4.4.7–8  
 fireplaces, taxes on, 2.9.59  
 fish, export of, 4.9.13  
 fishing interest, 2.8.98  
 fishing rights, 3.11.13  
 Fiske, John, 1.87n15  
 Fitzsimons, Thomas, 3.2.5  
 Five Nations (Iroquois), 6.9.9  
 Florentine republic, 5.1.19, 5.1.81  
 folk-motes, 5.1.64  
 force  
   alternative to persuasion in government, 1.16–17  
   in formation of governments, 4.3.15, 4.12.1, 6.11.26  
   necessity of, for defense of liberty, 5.16.2  
   obedience compelled by, 2.9.48  
   only check on congressional power, 3.3.12  
   ruling principle of proposed government, 5.11.5  
   spirit of people broken by, 2.8.93  
 Ford, Paul Leicester, 2.2 intro.  
   on Agrippa, 4.6 intro. n2  
   on Cato, 2.6 intro.  
   on Centinel, 2.7 intro. n4  
   on Federal Farmer, 2.8 intro.  
   on identity of Brutus, 2.9 intro.  
   on Officer of the Late Continental Army, 3.8 intro.  
   on Sidney, 6.9 intro.  
 foreign affairs  
   Agrippa on, 4.6.34  
   censorship of publications concerning, 6.1.5

- foreign affairs (*continued*)
  - federal government and, 2.8.10, 2.8.35
  - president's role in, 2.6.31
  - proper sphere of Congress, 4.6.54
  - states excluded from, 2.8.84
- foreign affairs, secretary for, 2.8.181
- foreign authority, repudiation of, by Massachusetts officials, 4.24.4
- foreign enemies
  - America's relative safety from, 5.12.3
  - not deterred by standing army, 3.9.22, 3.9.27
  - unlikelihood of attack by, 2.4.34
- foreigners
  - eligibility of, for public office, 4.13.26
  - exclusion of, from eastern states, 4.6.34
  - imagined reaction of, to new Constitution, 5.14.1
  - litigation involving, 2.8.224, 2.9.183, 4.6.42, 5.15.1
- foreign influence
  - Anti-Federalist hostility to, 1.20
  - Washington's warning against, 6.14.100
- foreign intrigues, 5.1.53
- foreign nations
  - contempt for America in, 5.7.4
  - dangers of borrowing from, 2.9.94-95
  - Federalist desire to imitate, 4.6.45
  - influence of, in Congress, 2.5.22
  - litigation involving, 2.4.89, 2.4.91
  - power to borrow from, 4.22.4
  - respect of, 2.6.4, 5.16n11
- forfeitures, actions for, 3.3.16
- Fort Stanwix, New York, 6.9.9
- forty, council of (Venice), 3.6.38
- Founding Fathers, Anti-Federalists' place among, 1.3
- Framers of the Constitution
  - admirers of natural religion, 3.16.15
  - base principles of, exposed, 3.9.75
  - character and ability of, 4.23.8, 6.11.33
  - Countryman on, 6.6.3-4
  - disregard of legality by, 1.7-8
  - distrust of people, 3.11.50
  - history's judgment of, 3.9.76
  - Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.10
  - intentions of, on appellate jurisdiction, 3.5n6
  - intention to defraud public, 2.7.171
  - liability of, to error, 5.2.4
  - mixed character of, 6.3.7
  - motivation of, by private interests, 3.9.83
  - respectability of, 2.7n2, 3.6n4, 5.10.2
  - responsibility of, for new government, 4.27.4
  - patriotism and good intentions of, 2.9.89, 3.3.14
  - varied interests of, 4.3.3
  - wisdom and experience of, 6.3.2, 6.6.30
- France
  - absolutism in, 2.8.178
  - aristocracy in, 5.1.29
  - comparison of, with Asian powers, 5.1.111
  - conquest of Corsica by, 3.9.38
  - duties of on imports, 4.9.13
  - James Monroe's mission to, 6.14.94-95
  - jury trial in, 4.28.4
  - law courts in, 3.11.40
  - manipulation of justice in, 5.1.67
  - [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.39
  - Mercy Warren on, 6.14.138-45
  - provincial assemblies in, 2.8.103
  - religious discord in, 4.25.3
  - request for troops from, 3.16.17
  - rivalry of, with Great Britain, 5.12.3
  - standing armies in, 4.3.29
  - treaty of, with Great Britain (1786), 3.11.43
  - U.S. debts to, 4.23.3(3), 4.6.27
  - use of treaties by, to acquire influence, 5.3.20
- franchise, 1.89n14, 4.23.3(2)
  - Mercy Warren on, 6.14.175
  - See also* suffrage
- Franco-American Treaty (1778), 3.16.17, 5.16.1, 5.16.2
- Frankland, 2.6.16
- Franklin, Benjamin, vol. 2, pt. 1, intro., 2.7.5, 2.7n2, 2.9n13, 3.8.8, 4.9.15, 4.12.1

- Franklin, Benjamin (*continued*)  
 on appointment of bishop, 6.6.18  
 attempt of, to curb freedom of  
 press, 6.6.19  
 attitude of, toward slavery, 6.6.7  
 comment of, on Constitution,  
 6.14.48, 6.14n6  
 on contrast between Europe and  
 America, 6.8.18  
 delegate to Federal Convention,  
 3.11n1  
 fallibility of, 6.8.5  
 importance of, in Federalist strat-  
 egy, 3.16.17  
 large states favored by, 2.4.37  
 [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1n73  
 moderate Constitutionalist, vol. 3  
 intro.  
 on Pennsylvania government,  
 3.8.10, 6.6.17–18  
 on presidential salary, 4.12.5  
 Republican Federalist on, 4.13.10  
 Franklin, state of, 2.4.106  
 Franklin County, Pennsylvania,  
 2.7.184, 3.2.3  
 fraud  
 in Constitutional Convention,  
 4.28.8  
 in formation of government,  
 4.12.1  
 sanctioned by state laws, 2.9.182  
 fraudulent debtors  
 interests of, promoted by new  
 Constitution, 2.8.1  
 Frederick III (Denmark), 5.1.36,  
 5.1.67  
 freedom  
 attraction of immigrants to  
 America by, 6.14.4  
 encouragement of industry and  
 science by, 4.3.24  
 natural right of, 2.6.11, 2.9.24  
 Republicus on, 5.13.2  
 use of Constitution to subvert,  
 5.9.2  
 free inquiry, 5.11.4, 5.18.2  
 desire to prevent, 2.8.3  
 society not weakened by, 6.14.134  
 Freeholder (pseud.), 5.20.3, 5.20n2  
 freeholders, referral of legislation  
 to, 5.1.113  
 Freeman (pseud.), 2.7.158, 3.11  
 intro. n1  
 Deliberator's reply to, 3.13  
 reply of to Pennsylvania Conven-  
 tion Minority, 2.7n84, 3.11n15  
 on state sovereignty, 3.13n1,  
 3.14.14  
 on treason laws, 3.14n11  
*Freeman's Journal* (New Hamp-  
 shire), 3.3n17  
*Freeman's Journal* (Philadelphia),  
 2.7, 3.9, 3.13–15  
*Freeman's Oracle*, 4.17, 4.23  
 French Directory, 6.14.92, 6.14.95  
 French Revolution, 6.14.81, 6.14.90,  
 6.14.142–45  
 Friend to the Constitution (pseud.),  
 5.3 intro. n2  
 Friend of the Republic (pseud.),  
 4.23.4–8  
 Friend to the Rights of the People  
 (pseud.), 4.23.1–3  
 frontier, defense of, 2.9.121–22,  
 2.9.125–26, 3.4.5  
 frugality, 3.10.7  
 Congress and, 4.23.8  
 in government, 4.23.3(3)  
 increase of, 4.3.2  
 national recovery aided by, 6.3.10  
 functions, separation of, and sep-  
 aration of powers, 1.60–63  
 funding system, 6.14.70  
 future life, belief in, 2.4.108, 3.16.15  
 Galba (pseud.), 3.9.2, 3.9.5, 3.9.51,  
 3.9n2  
 Galba, Emperor, 4.12.4  
 Gallatin, Albert, 3.11n2  
 game laws, 3.11.13  
 Gaul, 4.12.6  
*Gazette of the State of Georgia*, 5.9  
 general government. *See* federal  
 government  
 general welfare, 2.7.11, 6.13.6  
 all objects of government included  
 in, 2.9.150  
 authority of legislature to inter-  
 pret, 2.9.5, 3.6.19  
 promotion of, by Confederation,  
 5.14.44  
 significance of, 2.7.96  
 general welfare clause  
 Countryman on, 6.7.13  
 ineffectiveness of, 2.9.78  
 Pennsylvania Convention Minor-

- general welfare clause (*cont.*)
  - ity on, 3.11.21
  - sinews of new Constitution, 4.5.20
  - Sydney on, 6.9.13, 6.9.30
  - use of, to violate religious freedom, 3.13.5
  - vagueness of, 2.9.57, 2.9.77
  - William Symmes on, 4.5.2
- general will, Mercy Warren on, 6.14.8
- Geneva, law of, 5.1.82
- Gentleman in a Neighbouring State (*pseud.*), 4.2
- gentry, 5.1.72, 5.3.20
- George II, 4.25.3
- George III, 3.9.15, 6.14.124
  - insanity of, 6.14.79
  - rejection of American petitions by, 3.9.32
  - suspensive power of, 5.13.14
- Georgia
  - contrast of, with New Hampshire, 2.9.18
  - fear of Indian war in, 4.28.9
  - and importation of slaves, 5.12.1
  - indivisibility of, 2.4.101–2
  - loss of slaves by during Revolution, 4.26.10
  - [Maryland] Famer on, 5.1.113
  - religious restrictions in, 3.12.18
  - representation of, 2.4.45, 4.14.1–2
  - size of, 2.4.34
  - unicameral legislature of, 2.8.89
  - vote of, against prohibition of slave trade, 2.4.65
  - vote of for unequal representation, 2.4.34
- Georgian (*pseud.*), 5.9; 1.94n24
- Germanicus Caesar, 5.1.103
- Germans
  - in ancient times, 5.1.64
  - in Pennsylvania, 6.6.18
- Germany (Germanic body, Holy Roman Empire)
  - governmental powers in, 2.8.205
  - jury trial in, 4.28.4
  - political example of, 5.1.80
  - poor example of confederacy, 6.12.4
  - royal prerogative in, 5.16.36
- Gerry, Elbridge, 2.1; 1.4n3, 1.51, 6.14n17
  - cited by Agrippa, 4.6.1, 4.6.3
  - delegate from Massachusetts, 4.13.6
  - Federalist attacks on, 2.8.73, 2.8n52, 4.19.4
  - identification of, as Columbian Patriot, 4.28 intro.
  - James Warren and, 4.13 intro.
  - on leveling spirit, 1.89n12
  - Luther Martin on, 2.4.27
  - motives of, 4.12.9
  - non-signer, 2.5.31, 3.2.7, 4.12.1
  - Objections to Signing the National Constitution*, 2.1
  - Richard Henry Lee and, 5.6 intro.
  - trustworthiness of, 4.19.3
- Gibbon, Edward, 5.1.53, 6.14.147
- Glencoe massacre, 5.2.4
- God
  - acknowledgment of, in Constitution, 4.24n1
  - America's neglect of, 4.14.7–8
  - belief in, 2.4.108
  - governance of universe by, 2.4 intro. n9, 4.11.2
  - human responsibility to, 5.8.3
  - law of, 2.9.4
  - witness to union of states, 2.4.112
  - See also* Deity
- gold
  - export of, 3.10.5
  - power to coin, 2.4.76
- golden age, 2.9.2
- Golden Bull, 5.1.74
- Goldsmith, Oliver, 6.8.7
- good behavior, tenure of office during, 2.4.82, 2.8.186, 2.9.188–92
- good faith, Constitution's violation of, 4.13.16
- Gore, Christopher, 4.12 intro.
- Gorham, Nathaniel, 2.4.19, 2.9n29, 4.6n32, 4.12.10
  - appointment of, as delegate, 4.13.6
  - on democratic government, 1.90n19
  - motives of, 4.12.9
- government
  - alterations in, 2.8.58, 5.6.1
  - appetite of, for revenue, 6.12.37
  - best form of, 3.12.4
  - branches of, 2.9.138, 2.9.197, 2.9.203, 3.12.14

- government (*continued*)  
 criteria for judging, 5.14.2  
 degeneration of, 4.5.12  
 dissolution of, 4.13.13  
 effect of, on people's character,  
 1.19  
 encroachment of, on rights of  
 people, 6.11.2  
 Englishman's natural jealousy of,  
 5.1.60  
 Federalists' positive attitude to-  
 ward, 1.71–72  
 forms of, 2.7.160  
 fundamentals of, 5.14.25  
 history of, 2.4 intro. n9  
 importance of good foundation in,  
 5.6.1  
 influence of, on morality, 3.9.9  
 instituted to restrain private in-  
 juries, 2.9.24, 4.4.16  
 means of securing independence  
 of, 3.16.6–9  
 periodic revision of, 5.19.7,  
 5.19.9–12  
 purposes of, 2.9.41, 4.26.2,  
 4.28.3, 5.16.2  
 reflection of community by, 2.6.34  
 reserved by Providence for well-  
 born, 3.7.2  
 right to, 5.3.15  
 servant of people, 3.9.32, 5.13.2  
 substitute for natural law, 5.13.2  
 and surrender of natural liberty,  
 2.9.24  
 universality of, 4.6.68  
 unwillingness of, to limit taxation,  
 4.3.23  
 William Penn on, 3.12.3  
 government, arbitrary  
 Republican Federalist on, 4.13.18  
 conditions under, 4.28.13  
 connection of, with civil law,  
 6.1.21  
 despotism and, 5.14.18  
 distinguished from free govern-  
 ment, 2.9.14, 5.14.2  
 judicial department most prone  
 to, 2.8.185  
*See also* despotism; tyranny  
 government, bad, good adminis-  
 tration no cure for, 3.12.4  
 government, frame of. *See* constitu-  
 tion  
 government, free  
 best features of, 2.8.77  
 and Creator's design, 5.21.3  
 distinguished from arbitrary gov-  
 ernment, 5.14.2  
 eclipse of bigotry under, 5.1.105  
 foundations of, 4.28.2  
 enjoyed by small fraction of man-  
 kind, 2.7.105  
 rulers and people united by,  
 2.9.45  
 stronger than tyrannical govern-  
 ment, 3.3.53  
 three forms of, 2.8.10  
 government, limited, equated by  
 Federalists with weak govern-  
 ment, 5.14.20. *See also* limited  
 government, doctrine of  
 government, local, 2.4.44, 2.6.20,  
 2.8.208, 2.8.213  
 government, military, 3.3.31, 4.22.3  
 government, principles of, variation  
 of according to circumstances,  
 4.13.3  
 government, science of,  
 abstruseness of, 2.6n6, 2.7 intro.,  
 2.7.3, 2.7.164  
 lack of advancement in, 6.14.114  
 innovations rare in, 1.2n2  
 partial and vague information  
 about, 2.8.74  
 and taxation, 5.16.25  
*Government of Nature Delineated*  
 (Aristocrotis), 3.16  
 governorships, American, 2.8.91  
 Grand Council (Venice), 3.6.38  
 grand inquest, 4.7.1  
 grand jury, 2.8.200, 4.15.2, 4.15.4.  
*See also* jurors; jury system;  
 jury trial  
 Grayson, William, 1.29, 5.16 intro.  
 Great Britain  
 accountability of ministers in,  
 2.6.44  
 agreement on fundamentals in,  
 3.9.90  
 American products excluded  
 from, 2.7.87  
 American treaty with (1794),  
 6.14.77–78, 6.14.80, 6.14.82–83  
 America's heritage from, 5.16.2  
 annual approval of military expen-  
 diture in, 2.8.220



## Index

### Great Britain (*continued*)

aristocracy in, 5.1.27  
Blackstone on jury trial in,  
4.17.22–23  
contrasted with U.S., 2.9.44,  
5.14.37  
debts owed to, 4.25.2  
direct taxation in, 2.9.73  
duties of, on imports, 4.9.13  
elections decided by plurality in,  
2.8.152  
exclusion of poor from Parliament  
in, 5.16.27  
exports to, 3.10.3  
friends of liberty in, 3.9.40  
ill-timed policy of, 4.3.23  
imports from, 4.9.18  
indecisiveness of, during Revolution,  
3.9.41  
ineffectiveness of controls on  
army in, 4.23.3(4)  
influence of monopolies in, 4.6.25  
Mercy Warren on, 6.14.146–48  
misery of poor in, 4.2.4  
occupation of western territories  
by, 4.25.2  
“one entire government” in,  
2.8.208  
openness of government in,  
5.16.21  
participation of, in slave trade,  
4.27.3  
party conflict in, 3.9.90  
party of freedom in, 3.9.38  
political turbulence in, 6.12.40  
population of, 4.13.25  
possible war with, 2.9.121–22,  
3.16.16  
postwar problems of, 6.14.79  
reaction of, to Constitution,  
3.9.40  
rebellion against, 2.4.68, 3.3.20  
representation in, 2.8.97, 4.13.25  
resistance to backed by whole  
people, 3.9.56  
restriction of trade with U.S.,  
4.6.46  
rivalry of, with France, 5.12.3  
treaty of, with France (1786),  
3.11.43  
U.S. ambassador to, 4.9.14  
use of treaties by, to acquire in-  
fluence, 5.3.20

violation of treaties by, 4.25.2  
Virginia and, 5.16.12  
withdrawal of allegiance from,  
3.9.80  
*See also* Bill of Rights, British;  
constitution, British; England  
Great Compromise, 2.1 intro., 2.4  
intro., 2.4.34–37  
debate over, 2.4.38  
John DeWitt on, 4.3.16  
Luther Martin’s reservations on,  
2.4.36  
proposal for additional consider-  
ation of, 2.4.37  
greatest happiness for greatest  
number, 16.14.39–40  
greatness, national, 3.9.26  
Patrick Henry on, 1.30–31  
United States’ ambition to  
achieve, 3.9.25–26  
Greek divinities, 5.1.106  
Greek states, ancient  
Amphictyonic Council, 2.4.30  
destruction of by corruption,  
6.12.19  
government finances of, 2.8.205  
irregularities of, 4.6.6, 4.6.49  
Philip of Macedon and, 4.12.1  
religion in, 3.16.14  
small extent of, 2.9.12  
standing armies and, 4.3.29,  
6.1.23  
Greenleaf, Thomas, 2.7.144, 2.7.163  
Grenville, George, 6.6.33  
Grenville, Baron (William Wynd-  
ham Grenville), 6.14.80  
Grisons, 5.1.76  
Grotius, Hugo, 2.9.137–38  
Gustavus III (Sweden), 5.1.35,  
5.1.95  
Habeas Corpus Act  
English liberties, 2.8.104, 3.3.23  
power to suspend, 2.4.72  
habeas corpus benefits, 2.7.55,  
2.9.175, 6.13.5  
anomaly of constitutional provi-  
sion for, 2.9.30  
constitutional right to, 2.8.80,  
2.8.86  
establishment of, 2.8.199, 3.11.32  
Patrick Henry on, 5.16.38  
protection for, 1.66, 2.9.103, 5.9.8

- habeas corpus benefits (*cont.*)  
 secured by Common Law, 2.8.200  
 and state courts, 4.15.4  
 suspension of, 3.4.5, 4.3.9  
 and trial by jury, 2.8.51
- habits, civil, and civil institutions,  
 4.7n1
- Hale, Sir Matthew  
 on bill of rights, 5.1.9  
 on general verdicts, 2.8.190  
 on trial by jury, 4.28.4
- Hall, John, 5.2n1
- Hamilton, Alexander, 1.83n4,  
 2.9n29  
 on aristocracy, 6.12n17  
 attack of, on George Clinton, 2.6  
 intro. n9  
 on authority for national defense,  
 2.9.85  
 author of Phocion Letters, 6.6n21  
 on balance in government, 6.13n3  
 and Cato letters, 2.6 intro.  
 on checks and balances, 1.54  
 and committee on salaries, 4.17n6  
 on demagoguery in large republic,  
 1.91n38  
 at Federal Convention, 6.6.30  
 on government control of re-  
 sources, 6.12n33  
 Mercy Warren on, 6.14.70  
 at New York convention, 2.6n14,  
 6.12 intro.  
 on offensive war, 1.31  
 on overdemocratic nature of pro-  
 posed government, 1.7n46  
 on popular confidence in govern-  
 ment, 6.12n13  
 on reducing representation,  
 6.12n14  
 on state legislatures, 6.12n30  
 on vices of rich and poor, 6.12n18  
 on virtues of effective administra-  
 tion, 1.41–42  
 and Whiskey Rebellion, 6.14.97n
- Hampden, John, 4.15; 4.28.4,  
 5.1.67, 5.1.73, 6.14.123
- Hampshire Chronicle*, 4.10
- Hampshire County, Massachusetts,  
 4.13.29, 6.14.33
- Hampshire Gazette*, 4.26, 4.27, 6.1  
 intro. n4
- Hancock, John, 3.9.79, 4.9.15  
 governor of Massachusetts,  
 6.14.34
- James Warren and, 4.13 intro.  
 at Massachusetts convention, vol.  
 4 intro.
- Hanna, John A., 3.11.56
- Hannibal, 5.1.108
- Hanno, 4.6n30
- Hanover, House of, 3.3.23
- Hanson, Alexander Contee, 5.1  
 intro., 5.1n1  
 on constitutional amendments,  
 5.4nn4–6  
 Maryland convention adjourn-  
 ment, 5.4.11  
 Maryland convention amend-  
 ments committee, 5.4.4  
 reply of, to Maryland Convention  
 Minority, 5.4 intro.  
*See also* Aristides
- happiness, individual, linked to  
 happiness of all, 3.9.73
- Harding, Samuel Bannister, vol. 3  
 intro.  
 on Brutus, 2.9 intro.  
 on Candidus, 4.9 intro. n1  
 on Charles Turner, 4.18 intro.  
 on Cornelius essay, 4.10 intro.  
 on Hampden essays, 4.15 intro.  
 on John DeWitt, 4.3 intro.  
 on Watchman, 4.22 intro.
- Harrington, James, 6.14.10
- Harris, John, 3.11.56
- Harrison, Benjamin, 5.2n1, 5.4.11
- Harvard College, 4.6 intro.
- Havana monopoly, 2.7.171
- Hazael (biblical king), 2.9.54
- Hazard, Ebenezar, 2.7n68
- Hazen, N. W., 4.5 intro. n3
- Heath, William, 4.26n12
- heathen. *See* pagans
- Heaven, Kingdom of, 4.26.8
- Heister, Joseph, 3.11.56
- Helvetian League. *See* Swiss con-  
 federation
- Helvetius, Claude Adrien, 4.28.2
- Helvidius Priscus, 4.12
- Henry VII (England), 5.1.41
- Henry VIII (England), 3.3.16, 5.1.41
- Henry, Patrick, 5.16; 1.8, 1.20, 1.27,  
 1.30–31, 1.35, 1.52, 2.6n21, 2.8n5  
 accused of having pro-British  
 sympathies, 5.16.32  
 appeal of, to posterity, 5.16.6

## Index

- Henry, Patrick (*continued*)  
on bill of rights, 1.67  
on British constitution, 1.58  
career of, 5.16 intro.  
on complexities of proposed government, 1.54  
devotion of to Union, 5.16 intro.  
equivocal terminology of, 1.86–87n4  
Federalist attitude toward, vol. 5, pt. 2, intro.  
on Framers, 5.16.1  
on meaning of “federal,” 1.9  
on monarchy, 3.9n37  
on separate confederacies, 2.7n75  
southern Anti-Federalist leader, vol. 5, pt. 1, intro.  
speeches of, at Virginia Convention, 5.16  
on states as preservers of liberty, 1.15  
on tyranny of rulers, 1.40  
on union, 1.24  
Herbert, Edward, 6.14.146  
Hesse-Cassel, prince of, 3.16.10  
hierarchy, social, 3.16.3  
high crimes and misdemeanors, 2.9.131, 2.9.192  
highways, repair of, 3.3.3  
Hillsborough, Viscount (Wills Hill), 4.28.4, 6.6.33  
history  
contempt for lessons of, 5.1.57  
Edward Wortley Montague on, 6.8.33  
lessons of, regarding abuse of power, 3.14.22, 4.5.12  
[Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.52  
*History of the Rise, Progress, and Termination of the American Revolution*, 4.28 intro.  
excerpts from, 6.14  
Hobbes, Thomas, 6.14.146  
Hoge, Jonathan, 3.11.56  
Holland  
abolition of elections in, 6.8.2n  
aristocracy in, 5.1.28  
attempt to establish despotism in, 5.1.38  
example of confederacy, 5.16.2  
exclusive charters in, 4.6.25  
executive in, 2.8.178  
finances of, 2.8.205  
Melancton Smith on, 6.12.4  
Newport Man on, 4.25.4  
political example of, 5.1.80  
power of stadtholder in, 5.9.10  
regencies of, 4.6.60  
requisitions for defense funds in, 2.8.208  
ruin of, by ambition, 5.16.11  
treaties of, with other nations, 4.6.46  
U.S. alliance with, 5.16.1, 5.16.2  
U.S. debts to, 4.6.27, 4.23.3(3), 4.25.2  
Watchman on, 4.22.2.  
*See also* Netherlands, United Provinces of the  
Holstein, House of, 5.1.25  
Holt, John, 6.6.19, 2.8.190  
Home Department, secretary of, 2.8.176  
Homer, 5.1.21  
homogeneity  
federalists on, 1.45  
importance of, in republics, 1.19–20, 2.9.16  
honor, importance of, in monarchies, 4.13.21  
Honorius, Emperor, 4.12n7  
Hopkinson, Francis (Little Fiddler)  
controversy of, with Benjamin Workman, 2.7 intro., 2.7.177  
“New Roof” parable, 3.11 intro.  
n1  
Hosea (prophet), 6.7.6  
Hottentots, 5.1.19  
House of Commons  
bribery in, 5.15.1n, 5.16.2  
coercion of, by army, 2.9.101  
comparison of, with House of Representatives, 5.3.20, 6.1.29  
debates on elections in, 4.28.4  
elections for, 4.23.3(2)  
and power of purse, 2.8.124  
ratio of members to population, 2.9.44  
size of, 4.2.5  
superiority of, to king, 5.16.14  
*See also* Parliament  
House of Delegates. *See* House of Representatives  
House of Lords  
British high court, 2.8.186, 2.8.194

- House of Lords (*continued*)  
 during Commonwealth, 5.1.73  
 comparison of, with U.S. Senate,  
 2.4.50, 5.13.13  
 Cornelius on, 4.10.21  
 money bills and, 4.2.6  
 power of, to correct judicial de-  
 cisions, 2.9.187, 2.9.191  
 role of, in British system, 5.16.14  
*See also* Parliament
- House of Representatives  
 and appointment of officials,  
 2.8.169  
 Cassius on, 1.51  
 Cincinnatus on, 6.1.29  
 concealment of proceedings by,  
 5.16.8  
 and constitutional council, 2.2.6  
 corruptibility of, 4.2.6  
 defects of, 1.18, 2.2.2  
 democratic element of proposed  
 Constitution, 3.4.2  
 democratic features of, 3.16.4  
 divorce of, from people, 2.9.42  
 election of members, 2.6.47,  
 3.11.13  
 expense of, 2.8.117  
 first branch of legislature, 2.4.16  
 George Clinton on, 6.13.21  
 Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.33  
 impeachment power of, 2.4.87,  
 3.16.15  
 ineffective check on federal  
 power, 5.6.2  
 ineffective check on Senate,  
 2.7.49  
 ineffective protector of people's  
 rights, 2.6.43  
 inequality of states in, 3.6.12  
 influence of Senate on, 4.3.14  
 John DeWitt on, 4.3.13, 4.3.14  
 Luther Martin on, 2.4.38  
 rivalry of, with Senate, 2.4.51,  
 4.13.28–29  
 security for states, 2.6.47  
 size of, 2.8.22  
 and treaty-making power, 2.2.10,  
 2.8.147, 3.3.14  
 undemocratic character of,  
 2.8.145  
 unrepresentative character of,  
 3.11.34, 3.11.35, 4.3.14, 5.3.20  
 houses and buildings, taxes on,  
 2.9.59, 2.9.92
- Huguenots, 3.3.27
- human nature  
 depravity of, 1.94n4, 4.3.19,  
 4.26.5, 5.14.2, 6.8n2  
 inconsistency of, 3.10.1, 4.28  
 intro.  
 propensity of, to tyrannize, 2.4  
 intro. n9  
 unchanging character of, 5.18.6
- human race, unity of, 4.27.3
- Humble, John (pseud.), 3.7
- Hume, David, 2.6.43, 3.5.10, 4.3.28,  
 6.14.146
- Humphry Hocus (Jonathan Swift),  
 3.3.51
- Huntington, Samuel, 5.1n16
- Hutchinson, Thomas, 4.28.4
- idolatry, 3.3.51
- ignorance  
 relationship of, to confidence,  
 5.1.19  
 of southern lower classes, 4.6.48  
 and tyranny, 3.12.7
- immigrants, taxation of, 2.4.64,  
 6.7.5–6
- immigration, 6.10.6  
 in Declaration of Independence,  
 6.7.6  
 encouragement of, 4.13.26  
 federal control of, 3.13.5, 6.1.12
- immigration, voluntary, southern  
 states unlikely to benefit from,  
 5.12.3
- Impartial Examiner (pseud.), 5.14;  
 1.10  
 on growth of popular apathy, 1.75  
 on popular confidence, 1.84n11  
 theoretical importance of, 1.6
- impartiality  
 not to be expected from public  
 men, 2.8.125  
 of Philadelphia printers, 3.9.5,  
 3.9.23, 3.9.55
- impeachment, 2.4.16, 2.8.33, 4.5.2  
 and appointment of officers by  
 legislature, 2.8.176  
 Cassius on, 5.15.1  
 of convention delegates, 6.6.20  
 dangers of Senate involvement in,  
 3.11.42  
 in Great Britain, 5.15.1

## Index

- impeachment (*continued*)
  - House of Representatives and, 2.8.140, 6.1.29
  - inadequate provision for, 2.4.87
  - ineffectiveness of, 5.6.2, 5.11.7
  - James Monroe on, 5.21.23
  - and judicial power of Senate, 3.4.3, 6.1.26–27
  - in New York State, 6.9.28
  - of president, 2.4.87–88, 5.21.34
  - of representatives, 4.10.7
  - of senators, 2.5.41
  - of Supreme Court justices, 2.9.184
- impeachment, power of
  - and prevention of official misconduct, 2.8.170
  - relationship of, to sovereignty, 3.14.15
- imperium in imperio*, 6.13.9
- import duties, 2.4.55
  - limited nature of, 2.9.63
  - national government's control of, 2.4.79, 3.6.31
  - source of federal revenue, 3.3.34–35
  - Vox Populi on, 4.4.21
- imports, 6.11.6, 2.7.66
  - congressional power to prohibit, 6.1.12
  - decline of, 6.1.42
  - discouragement of, 4.3.5
  - evil effects of, 2.7.103
  - federal control of, 2.8.10, 2.8.35
  - Mercy Warren on, 6.14.20
  - Publius on, 2.9n64
  - state power to exclude, 2.8.84
- impost, 2.4.55–56, 6.10.4
  - additional powers for Congress, 3.9.24
  - adequacy of, for federal revenue, 4.6.77
  - amendment concerning, 5.4.7
  - application of revenue from, 4.6.29
  - Cincinnatus on inadequacy of, 6.1.41–42
  - change of attitude toward, 4.12.10
  - comparison of, with other sources of revenue, 2.8.209
  - on domestic produce and manufactures, 4.5.14
  - equalization of, 3.2.7, 4.5.15, 4.5.16, 4.9.35
  - federal control of, 3.3.33, 4.3.9, 4.5.2
  - on importation of slaves, 3.13.3
  - increase of, for delinquent states, 5.7.6
  - and internal police, 2.9.92
  - legitimate congressional concern about, 5.9.3
  - limitations on, 4.6.42
  - main source of federal revenue, 2.7.52
  - in New York, 6.11.19
  - oppressiveness of, 5.1.13
  - and payment of foreign debt, 4.9.30
  - [Pennsylvania] Farmer on, 3.14.11
  - proposal of, by Confederation government, 2.8.205, 2.9.88
  - revenue derived from, 4.3.20, 6.11.19–20, 6.11n19
- impost, 5 percent
  - Cincinnatus on, 6.1.45
  - proposal for, 3.2n1
  - rejection of, 3.11.2, 4.5.9
  - Robert Morris on, 6.8.29
  - Sidney on, 6.8.1, 6.8.4
- impost officers, 4.3.31
- imposts, state
  - abolition of, 6.1.43
  - assignment of, to general fund, 5.12.2
  - congressional consent required for, 2.9.5
  - surrender of, to federal government, 4.6.33
- impressment, 2.9.96
- imprisonment, 2.4.72, 3.5.9, 5.14.10
- inconstancy, human, attempts to correct by constitutional means, 6.12.7
- indebtedness, notes of, 2.9.162, 2.9.166
- indentured servants, 2.4.16
- independence
  - of judges, 2.9.197
  - and liberty, 3.9.37
  - loss of, by states, 5.14.4
  - natural right of, 2.6.11
- independence, American
  - opponents of, among Framers, 3.11.5

## Index

- independence, American (*cont.*)
  - role of states in winning, 3.14.20
  - unanimous support for, 2.5.24
  - Union essential to, 5.12n7
- Independent Chronicle* (Boston), 2.2
  - intro. n6, 4.9, 4.12, 4.14
- Independent Chronicle* (Virginia), 5.7
- Independent Citizen (pseud.), 3.2n2
- Independent Gazetteer* (Philadelphia), 2.7, 3.3, 3.4, 3.7, 3.8, 3.9, 3.10, 3.12
  - pressure on, to cease publishing Anti-Federalist articles, 3.9.7
- India (Indostan)
  - American trade with, 4.6.63, 4.6.78
  - aristocracy in, 4.6.68
  - oppression of poor in, 3.9.35
- Indian affairs
  - federal control of, 2.8.10, 2.8.35
  - ordinance regulating (1786), 6.9.9
- Indians, American
  - assimilation of, 5.16n2
  - government of, 4.6.68, 5.1.80
  - land agreements with, 6.9.6
  - protection against, 2.9.121–22
  - relations of states with, 6.9.9
  - trade with, 2.8.214, 2.9.126
  - treaties with, 5.20.4
  - war with, 2.9.90, 3.5.12, 6.6.36, 6.14.77–78
  - and western militia, 2.4.62
- indictment, 4.15.4
- indigo, 4.5.2
- individual
  - apparent opposition of, to majority interests, 5.1.15
  - defense of, against majority, 4.6.73
  - rights of, 2.4 intro. n9
- individuals
  - Constitution an agreement among, 3.11.30, 4.6.69, 4.16.12, 5.1.12
  - government of, 3.8.3
- industriousness, encouragement of, 3.16.7
- industry
  - characteristic of free peoples, 4.6.5
  - effect of Constitution on, 5.16.10
  - freedom and, 4.3.14, 4.6.5
  - increase of, 4.3.2
  - John Marshall on inducements to, 5.16n23
  - penalization of, by Constitution, 4.5.2
  - U.S. recovery aided by, 6.3.10
- industry, American, benefits to, from decay of trade, 4.2.3
- industry, spirit of, 2.9.86
- ineligibility for office, 2.8.169, 2.8n100, 5.13.4
- inequality, sources of, 1.57
- influence, system of, 2.8.37, 2.8n26
- Ingersoll, Jared, vol. 3 intro., 3.2.5
- inheritance laws, 3.11.13
- innovation
  - danger of, 4.6.58
  - Denatus on, 5.18.4
  - encouragement of, by American Revolution, 2.7.4
  - Hampden on, 4.15.6
  - Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.1
  - jealousy of, 2.7.164
  - Patrick Henry on, 5.16.23
  - Samuel on, 4.14.10
  - Sir William Temple on, 4.13.16
- Inquisition, 4.27.5
- inspection laws, 3.14.18
- installment law, 5.12.1
- insurrection
  - under Confederation, 2.5.4, 2.5.13
  - and economic distress, 6.14.23
  - federal responsibility for suppressing, 2.4.103, 2.9.86
  - and insurance of domestic tranquillity, 2.9.151
  - [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.30
  - Publius on, 2.9n73
  - suppression of, by militia, 2.4.60, 3.11.58
  - suppression of, by standing army, 5.1.48
  - See also* rebellion
- insurrection, general, unlikelihood of, 4.5.19
- interest, strongest tie between men, 2.7n5
- interest (monetary)
  - payment of, by delinquent states, 5.16.27
  - on public debt, 2.8.205, 3.10.6, 6.3.10

- interest, aggregate (general)
  - difficulty of pursuing in representative government, 5.5.6
  - promotion of, by representatives, 1.45
- interest, mutual, source of union, 1.24-25
- interested combinations, 2.8.95, 2.8.147
- internal matters
  - Congress and, 2.9.81
  - powers relating to, 2.8.35
- intolerance, 3.3.27-28
- intrigue, role of, in government, 2.7.107, 5.1.113
- invasion
  - America's relative safety from, 2.9.90, 6.5.4
  - defense against, 2.4.60, 2.9.86
  - Mercy Warren on possibility of, 6.14.157
  - and need for standing army, 4.3.32
  - projects for, 6.1.24
  - and suspension of Habeas Corpus Act, 2.4.72
- invasion, threat of, excuse for postponing elections, 2.7.100, 3.11.25
- Iredell, James, 1.51, 2.2 intro., 2.2n1, 2.2n3, 2.2n7. *See also* Marcus
- Ireland, 4.6.25, 4.6.53, 4.6.76, 4.25.3
- ironworks, 3.3.32
- isolationism, 1.21
- Israel, ancient, example of, 4.23.3(1) 5.19.10, 6.7.8, 6.12.7
- Italy, 4.28.4
- Jackson, Andrew, 1.88n42
- Jacobite rebellion, 5.1.75
- Jacobitism, 4.3.25
- James II, 5.1.6
- janissaries, 2.9.107, 3.9.22, 3.11.49, 5.1.100
- Jay, John
  - on decline of public spirit, 1.9n17
  - on Framers of Constitution, 3.6n4
  - negotiations of, with Britain, 6.14.77-78, 6.14.80
  - negotiations of, with Spain, 5.16 intro.
  - See also* Citizen of New York
- Jay Treaty (1794)
  - opposition to, 6.14.96, 6.14.98
  - ratification of, 6.14.82-83
- jealousy
  - basis of objections to new Constitution, 4.4.10
  - and formation of government, 4.4.16
  - of people toward their representatives, 2.9.49
  - among states, 2.5.10
  - usefulness of, in republics, 5.12.1
- Jefferson, Thomas, 2.2 intro., 2.2n1, 3.11n2
  - on disputes between branches of government, 1.75
  - and James Monroe, 5.21 intro.
  - and John Francis Mercer, 5.1 intro.
  - on Patrick Henry, 5.16n1
  - on republican spirit, 1.99n10
- Jeffrey, William, 2.9 intro. n4, 2.9 intro. n8, 2.9n2, 2.9n17, 2.9n87
- Jenifer, Daniel of St. Thomas, 2.4.34n
- Jensen, Merrill, 1.87n15
  - on Brutus, Jr., 6.3 intro. n2
  - on idea of nationhood, 1.24, 2.8n7
  - and reassessment of Anti-Federalists, 1.4
- Jesus Christ, 3.16.14
- Jewish polity, ancient, 3.16.14. *See also* Israel, ancient
- Jews
  - dispersion of, 5.19.10
  - eligibility of, for public office, 2.8.150, 4.22.4
- Jiménes (Ximénes) de Cisneros, Francisco, 4.28.4, 5.1.40
- John (king of England), 3.3.23, 4.9.31
- Jones, J. C., 4.6n32
- Jones, Willie, 2.8n5
- journals
  - of Congress, 4.5.2
  - of Constitutional Convention, 4.28.8
- judges
  - appointment of, 4.4.39
  - in civil law system, 2.8.192
  - election of, 2.9.197
  - exclusion of, from Congress, 4.21.1

- judges (*continued*)
  - friends to government, 3.3.53
  - incapacity of, 2.9.191–92
  - and juries, 6.1.15
  - nomination of, 2.5.41
  - role of, in trials, 6.1.19
  - rotation of, in office, 2.8.147
  - salaries of, 2.8.186, 2.8.188, 2.9.191
  - support of, for Constitution, 4.21.1
  - suppression of facts by, 5.1.66
  - upper-class origins of, 2.8.54
  - wide discretion of, 2.8.185
- judges, federal
  - appointment of, by Congress, 2.4.16
  - control of, by large states, 2.4.17
  - dependence of, on Congress and president, 3.11.41
  - favoritism of, to federal officers, 5.16.6
  - power of, to void state laws, 5.3.16
  - and punishment of tax defaulters, 3.7.2
  - removability of, 2.9.192
- judges, Israelite, 4.6.68
- judges, state
  - choice of, 4.22.4
  - and federal laws, 4.6.40
  - terms of office, 2.8.92
- judicial officers
  - at Constitutional Convention, 6.5.4
  - oath of, to support federal Constitution, 2.9.31, 4.4.34, 4.4.36
- judicial officers, federal, independence of people and legislature, 2.9.130
- judicial power
  - aid to legislature, 2.7.96
  - arbitrary and despotic tendency of, 2.8.185
  - combination of, with legislative and executive, 6.1.26
  - limitation and definition of, 2.5.41
  - nature and extent of, 2.9.132
  - medium by which government makes itself felt, 2.9.130
  - Plebeian on, 6.11.15
  - Samuel Chase on, 5.3.13
- judicial review, 2.9.187, 2.9.195
- Congress and, 2.9.147
- Brutus and Publius on, 1.50 2.9n97
- by Supreme Court, 2.7.168
- judiciaries, state
  - adequacy of, to secure justice, 2.9.180, 2.9.183
  - competence of, 2.4.58
  - federal threat to, 2.4.89, 2.7.14, 2.7.41–42, 2.8.16, 5.14.9
  - organization of, 2.8.92
  - and state financial problems, 2.9.181
  - superiority of, 2.8.224
  - and trial by jury, 2.8.41
  - See also* courts, state
- judiciary
  - abuses in, difficult to detect, 2.8.185
  - Anti-Federalist opinion on, 1.50
  - Aristides and, 5.1.88
  - under Confederation, 4.6.3
  - Patrick Henry on, 5.1.66
  - Publius on, 1.93n14
  - purpose of, 4.17n15
  - separation of, from executive and legislature, 4.21.1, 5.15.1
- judiciary, English
  - control of, by legislature, 2.9.188, 2.9.193
  - extension of jurisdiction by, 2.7.14, 2.9.143
  - freedom of, from crown influence, 2.9.190
  - House of Lords and, 2.9.187
- judiciary, federal, 2.7.12
  - Agrippa on, 4.6.17, 4.6.19, 4.6.52
  - appellate jurisdiction of, 2.7.42, 4.9.16
  - bill of rights and, 3.3.12
  - Brutus on, 2.9.130–44
  - and cases involving foreign envoys, 2.9.168, 4.6.42, 4.9.22
  - and cases involving states, 4.6.20
  - Charles Pinckney on, 1.93n12
  - Columbian Patriot on, 4.28.4
  - concealment of its powers, 3.4.4
  - constitutional features of, 2.8.186
  - and contract disputes, 2.4.55
  - Cornelius on, 4.10.13, 4.10.18
  - departure of, from Anglo-American tradition, 2.9.186, 2.9.188, 5.14.9



- judiciary, federal (*continued*)
  - executive functions of, 2.8.185
  - expense of, 2.4.58, 4.10.13
  - Federal Farmer on, 2.8.41
  - Federalist Republican on, 3.6.23
  - Friend to the Rights of the People on, 4.23.3(7)
  - Georgian on, 5.9.12–14
  - incompatibility of, with state judiciaries, 2.8.16
  - improper blend of functions in, 2.8.29
  - independence of, 2.9.188–89
  - inferior tribunals of, 2.4.57
  - James Monroe on, 5.21.28, 5.21.35
  - judges of both law and fact, 6.1.14
  - jurisdiction of, 2.4.16, 2.4.89–94, 2.7.42, 2.8.221, 2.9.7
  - and jurisdiction of federal government, 2.9.140–44
  - and libel cases, 4.8.1
  - [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.89
  - Pennsylvania Convention Minority on, 3.11.38–42
  - and power of Congress, 2.9.142
  - power of, over states, 2.9.195, 3.11.28
  - Publius on, 2.9n110
  - restrictions on, 3.11.13
  - Richard Henry Lee on, 5.6.2–3
  - separation of, from executive and legislature, 4.3.12
  - and state debts, 2.9.164
  - Sydney on, 6.9.23
  - and tax cases, 2.4.55
  - threat of, to states, 2.2.5, 3.2.7, 6.13.24
  - and unconstitutional acts of legislature, 2.9.148
  - William Symmes on, 4.5.2
  - See also* courts, federal; Supreme Court
- Junius (pseud.), 2.8.73, 2.8.107, 3.9.49, 5.18.4
- juntos
  - in British government, 4.11.4
  - in legislatures, 2.9.47
  - See also* factions
- juntos, aristocratic, 2.7.65
- juries
  - assignment of, to Supreme Court, 4.17.3
  - corruptibility of, 2.8.192, 4.17.16
  - and courts, 2.8.189
  - criticisms of, 5.1.67
  - and judges, 6.1.15
  - [New Hampshire] Farmer on, 4.17.22
  - packing of, 4.14.4
  - people's check on judiciary, 2.8.55, 2.8.190
  - proposal to lessen their power, 6.1.15
- juries, English, 5.1.13
- jurisdictions, concurrent, 1.33–34, 2.5.41, 2.9.67, 4.6.43
  - amendment concerning, 5.4.6
  - Aristides on, 5.1.89, 5.1n59
  - Brutus on, 2.9.158
  - careful definition of, 6.12.36
  - Cato Uticensis on, 5.7.9
  - Federal Farmer on, 2.8.221
  - George Clinton on, 6.13.8–9
  - Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.4
  - impossibility of their coexistence, 2.9.76, 3.11.23, 5.17.1
  - Patrick Henry on, 5.16.32
  - Sydney on, 6.9.27
- jurisdiction, conflict of, between federal and state courts, 3.5.3
- jurisprudence
  - education of people in, 5.18.9, 5.18.11
  - foundation of, on reasonable distrust, 4.4.16
- jurors
  - and illiteracy, 3.16.12
  - pay of, 4.17.24
- jury system
  - congressional power to establish, 5.1.62
  - modification of, by new Constitution, 5.16.36
  - variations of, among states, 2.8.193, 6.1.19
  - weighted in favor of guilty, 4.17n11, 4.17n15
- jury trial, 2.2.13, 2.7.122, 6.10.8, 6.14.9–10
  - Alfredus on, 4.17.16, 4.17n15
  - amendments on, 5.4.6
  - in Anti-Federalist arguments, 1.64
  - and appeals to Supreme Court, 2.9.173
  - Aristocrotis on, 3.16.12–13

- jury trial (*continued*)  
   Blackstone on, 4.15.4  
   Cincinnatus on, 6.1.7, 6.1.13–15  
   in civil cases, 2.7.1, 2.7n20, 2.8.51, 3.2.7, 3.3.16, 3.5.5–9, 3.8.3, 4.8.2  
   Columbian Patriot on, 4.28.4  
   congressional authority to limit, 3.14.12  
   constitutional right to, 2.8.80, 2.8.86  
   Countryman on, 6.7.2  
   in criminal cases, 4.17.22  
   in Declaration of Independence, 6.7.6  
   denial of, 3.9.67, 4.6.1  
   in England, 2.8.104, 5.1.64  
   and federal courts, 2.8.16, 2.9.179  
   Federal Farmer on, 2.8.186–93  
   federal judiciary's threat to, 5.14.9  
   innocent protected by, 2.7.159  
   in Maryland, 5.3.8  
   [Maryland] Farmer on, 1.18–19 5.1.62–67  
   in Massachusetts constitution, 4.8.2  
   means of eliminating, 3.11.41  
   in New York constitution, 6.9.22  
   in northern states, 4.15.2  
   original purpose of, 4.7n15  
   Patrick Henry on, 5.16.2, 5.16.24  
   Pennsylvania Convention Minority on, 3.11.13, 3.11.32, 3.11.39–40  
   Philadelphensis on, 3.9.21  
   Plebeian on, 6.11.32  
   political significance of, 1.18–19  
   popular check on judiciary, 2.8.55, 2.8.190, 4.17.23, 5.1.65  
   privilege of, undermined, 2.4.92–93, 2.7.41, 2.7.43–44  
   in property cases, 2.9.29  
   Rawlins Lowndes on, 5.12.2  
   in revenue cases, 5.14.7  
   Richard Henry Lee on, 5.6.2–3, 5.6.5  
   right to, secured by common law, 2.8.200  
   safeguard for rights of common man, 2.7.44  
   and second Constitutional Convention, 3.3.51  
   Son of Liberty on, 6.2.2  
   and strength of government, 3.3.53  
   suggested federal provisions for, 4.6.42, 4.6.75  
   supposed Federalist indifference to, 3.3.16  
   various state practices regarding, 2.7.43, 2.8.53, 2.8.193, 4.8n5, 6.1.19  
   of vicinage, 1.85n27, 2.8.43, 2.9.27, 3.5.6, 3.13.5, 4.6.21, 4.15.4, 5.6.5, 6.6.31  
   violation of right to, 5.3.17  
 jury verdicts  
   appeals from, 2.7.25, 2.8.194, 2.9.176  
   traditional finality of, 2.9.171  
 justice, 2.9.151, 2.9.156, 4.3.1  
   denial of, 2.9.178  
   equality of, 4.6.28, 5.14.44  
   and government, 4.26.2  
   impartiality of, 4.17.23  
   inaccessibility of, to poor, 2.2.5  
   slavery contrary to, 2.9.39  
   spirit of, 2.9.86  
 justice, administration of  
   ends of government, 2.9.150  
   and federal bankruptcy law, 2.8.221  
 justice, distributive, 4.2.8  
 justices of peace, 4.17.24, 5.16.27  
  
 Kames, Henry Home (Lord Kaims), 2.7.143, 2.7n76  
 Kentucky, 2.4.106  
*Kentucky Gazette*, 5.13  
 Kenyon, Cecelia, 1.6, 1.55  
 Kenyon collection, 3.4 intro.  
 King, Rufus, 1.89n61, 2.9n29, 4.6n32, 4.6n37, 4.12 intro.  
   appointment of, as delegate, 4.13.6  
   at Massachusetts convention, 2.1 intro.  
   motives of, 4.12.9  
   on nature of federal union, 4.16.2  
   on proportional representation, 2.4.34  
   on slave trade, 4.26.8  
 king, British, 2.8.103, 2.8.109  
   dependence of, on Parliament, 2.6.31

- king, British (*continued*)  
 executive, legislative, and judicial  
 functions of, 5.14.36  
 hereditary rights of, 2.4.54  
 and judiciary, 2.9.190  
 legislative function of, 2.7.49  
 patronage power and revenues of,  
 4.2.3, 4.2.5  
 power of, over peace and war,  
 2.8.208, 5.16.23, 6.11.29  
 power of, to add members to Par-  
 liament, 6.8.40  
 powers of, compared to president,  
 3.3.31  
 powers of, misrepresented, 3.9.96  
 sovereignty of, 3.14.5  
 treaty-making power of, 5.12.1  
 veto power of, 2.8.182, 3.8.3,  
 5.15.1  
 King in Council, 3.3.14  
 king, elective, 3.3.31  
 kings  
 in ancient Rome, 5.14.21  
 divine right of, 6.6.40  
 kings, Israelite, 4.6.68  
 King's Bench, Court of, 2.7.41,  
 2.8.224, 2.9.157, 3.11.40,  
 6.13.24  
 king's debtor, 2.9.143  
 knowledge, failure of, to better  
 human condition, 5.1.21  
 Kolb (Kolben), Peter, 5.1.19, 5.11.14  
 Konkle, Burton Alva, 2.7 intro. n4,  
 3.2 intro.  
 Koran (Alcoran), 2.9.107, 3.16.14  
 Lamb, John, 1.67, 2.2n1, 5.11 intro.  
 n3  
 correspondence of, with Richard  
 Henry Lee, 2.8 intro. n6  
 New York Anti-Federalist, vol. 6  
 intro.  
 Lancaster and York, wars of, 5.1.75  
 land  
 equal division of, 2.8.59, 3.6n10  
 fall in value of, 6.14.17, 6.14.19  
 produce of, 3.9.87  
 titles to, 3.11.13, 4.1.3  
 land, public  
 sale of, 2.7.82, 2.8.2, 3.3.33,  
 3.3.35, 3.6.14, 4.9.31  
 seizure of, for public debt, 2.9.166  
 landed interest, 2.2.11  
 characteristics of voters in,  
 4.10.11  
 taxation of, 4.4.21  
 land grants, state, 2.9.155, 2.9.183  
 Landholder (pseud.), 1.46, 1.85–  
 86n9, 1.92n47, 2.1 intro., 2.4n1,  
 2.4n12, 2.8 intro. n15, 2.8.73,  
 2.8n52, 4.12.8. *See also*  
 Ellsworth, Oliver  
 landholders  
 disinclination of, to enact land  
 taxes, 2.6.40  
 exemption of, from taxation, 5.2.3  
 land tax, 2.8.36  
 and inland states, 4.15.16  
 power of Congress to impose,  
 2.9.59, 2.9.63  
 proposal of, in 1783, 2.9.92  
 Robert Morris and, 6.1.45, 6.8.29  
 land value, basis for taxation,  
 2.5.12, 3.6.43  
 language, ambiguity of, 4.3.7  
 Lansing, John, Jr., vol. 6, pt. 1,  
 intro.  
 at Constitutional Convention,  
 2.4.1  
 on federal finances, 6.11n7  
 New York convention delegate,  
 6.10.1, 6.12 intro.  
 and representation compromise,  
 2.4.37  
 on states' rights, 2.1.5  
*Reasons of Dissent*, 2.3  
 reply of, to Alexander Hamilton,  
 6.12n30  
 Lansing, Robert, 1.52  
 law  
 Anti-Federalist appeal to, 1.7  
 British king subject to, 5.1.10  
 common people no judges of,  
 3.16.12  
 determination of, by judiciary,  
 2.9.159  
 respect for, 2.9.86  
 rules for construing, 2.9.136  
*See also* civil law; common law  
 law, letter of, held to by state  
 judges, 2.9.181  
 law, martial, 2.8.185, 3.9.58,  
 3.14.19, 5.4.6  
 law, military, 2.4.60  
 law, natural, 5.13.2, 5.18.9  
 law, questions of, in federal cases,

## Index

- law, question of (*continued*)
  - 2.4.92, 2.4.94
- law, supreme, establishment of, by Constitution, 2.9.32
- “law and equity,” meaning of, 2.8.195, 2.9.134
- law and fact, judgment of, by same court, 4.5.2
- laws
  - adaptation of, to local customs, 4.6.48
  - approval of, by whole people, 5.1.81
  - based on popular consent, 2.8.86, 2.9.14, 4.25.3
  - enactment and execution of, by one agent, 3.11.44
  - equal application of, 4.6.35
  - evil effects of vagueness in, 5.10.3
  - frequent revision of, 2.7.63
  - government of, 2.8.63, 4.10.20, 5.15.1
  - instability of, 2.8.1
  - interpretation of, by president, 4.5.2
  - interpretation of, in practice, 4.6.72
  - perversion of, 2.8.121
  - power to enact and power to repeal, 3.3.33
  - respect for, 2.8.24
  - revision of, before passage, 3.3.19
  - superiority of, to treaties, 3.3.14
  - suspension of, 5.16.6
  - validity of, not affected by violations, 4.4.19
- laws, code of, 4.7n1
- laws, execution of, 2.8.76, 2.8.178, 2.9.17, 4.5.2
- laws, federal
  - cases involving, 2.4.91
  - Countryman on, 6.7.9
  - operation of, through states, 2.8.205
  - precedence of, over state laws, 3.6.33
  - supremacy of, 6.6.27
- laws, local, 4.6.16, 4.6.19
- laws, proposed, publication of, for people to consider, 3.3.19
- laws, state
  - modification of, by treaties, 4.14.4
  - nullification of, by Federal Constitution, 2.9.5, 3.16.6
  - promulgation of under governor’s name, 5.1.10
  - proposed amendment on, 4.6.75
  - repeal or revision of, by Congress, 2.7.96, 3.13.3
- laws, uniform, 4.6.17
- lawsuits
  - encouragement of, 2.8.16
  - protection of states against, 4.15.4
- lawyers
  - employment of, by federal government, 2.8.61
  - at Constitutional Convention, 2.7.166, 3.9.36, 6.5.4
  - ingenious explanations of, 5.12.1
  - injury of, by jury trials, 3.16.13
  - liking of, for vagueness and ambiguity, 4.21.1
  - resentment against, vol. 4 intro.
  - support of Constitution by, 4.7.1
- leadership, Anti-Federalist views on need for, 1.75
- league (foedus), 3.15.2
- learning, restriction of, to upper classes, 3.16.12
- leather, tax on, 3.16.17
- Ledlie, Hugh, 2.8 intro. n15
- Lee, Arthur, 6.1 intro. n2
- Lee, Richard Henry, 5.6; 1.26, 2.8n5
  - abuse of, 2.8.73, 2.8n52
  - American ideas of, 5.15.1
  - attack on, by New England, 4.12n16
  - cited by Helvidius Priscus, 4.12.9
  - on civic importance of religion, 1.22–23
  - defense of, by Brutus [Virginia], 5.15 intro.
  - and Elbridge Gerry, 2.1 intro. n7
  - Federal Farmer on, 2.6 intro., 2.8 intro.
  - on large republic, 1.17
  - letter of, to Edmund Randolph, 2.8 intro., 5.6
  - opinions of, 5.6 intro.
  - possible author of Cincinnatus essays, 6.1 intro.
  - possible author of Democratic Federalist essay, 3.5 intro.
  - on threats to religion, 1.23
  - views of, on representation, 5.1 intro.

## Index

- legal fictions
  - in Court of King's Bench, 2.9.157
  - courts inhibited from using, 5.4.6
  - employment of, in lawsuits, 2.9.157
  - use of to expand federal power, 2.8.224
- legal forms, omission of, in extreme cases, 5.16.5
- legality, Federalist desire to rise above, 1.14
- legal papers, stamp tax on, 2.4.55
- legal terminology, 2.9.132–33
- legate, papal, 4.9.31
- legislation
  - and power of taxation, 2.7.11, 2.7.96
  - presidential influence on, 2.5.40, 2.6.31, 3.9.65
- legislation, initiation of, 2.4.16
- legislation, internal, 5.21.17
- legislative dominance, in Pennsylvania under Confederation, vol. 3 intro.
- legislative power
  - combination of, with other branches of government, 2.5.22, 3.5.13, 5.15.1, 4.28.4, 6.1.26
  - essence of sovereignty, 3.14.4, 6.1.40
  - executive circumscribed by, 5.13.5
  - highest power in government, 2.7.96
  - John Locke on, 4.13.13
  - in a monarchy, 5.1.25, 5.14.36
  - Samuel Chase on, 5.3.12
  - in state constitutions, 6.1.31
- legislators
  - contact of, with their constituents, 2.8.147
  - immunity of, to arrest, 5.9.6
  - pursuit of private ends by, 2.9.47
  - salaries of, 5.9.6
- legislators, federal
  - alienation of, from people, 3.11.48, 4.10.9
  - exclusion of, from other offices, 2.8.169, 5.4.7
  - motives of, for perpetuating their office, 4.13.29
  - tendency of, to monopolize available offices, 2.8.120
- able offices, 2.8.120
- See also* representatives; senators
- legislators, state
  - appointment of, to other offices, 2.8.169
  - as constituents of federal legislators, 4.13.29
  - familiarity of, with their constituents, 4.10.9
  - frugal lives of, 4.10.9
  - oath of, to support federal Constitution, 2.9.31, 3.11.8, 4.4.34, 4.4.36
- legislature
  - abuses of, easily discovered, 2.8.185
  - arbitrary extension of power by, 4.13.28
  - association of, with executive, 2.9.203, 3.12.14
  - balance in, 3.16n6
  - future actions of, 2.2n3
  - requirements for freedom of, 3.11.33
  - separation of judiciary from, 4.21.1
  - size of, 4.13.25
  - sovereign power of, 1.61–62, 2.4.54, 3.3.11
  - submission of, to politic chieftain, 5.1.95
  - subservience of, to executive, 2.9.43
  - trust reposed in, 4.8n6
  - unconstitutional acts of, 2.9.148
- legislature, bicameral, 2.4.16, 2.4.39
  - Brutus on, 2.9.204
  - contradictions inherent in, 5.13.7
  - Federal Farmer on, 1.58–59, 2.8.146
  - novelty of, in federal government, 2.4.38
  - Republicus on, 5.13.7
  - security against bad laws, 3.6.10, 5.13.7
  - in state governments, 2.8.89
- legislature, federal
  - class composition of, 2.8.146
  - nature and extent of its powers, 2.9.55
  - Supreme Court's dominance over, 2.9.138
  - temporary grants of authority to

- legislature, federal (*continued*)
  - president by, 2.8.172
  - See also* Congress; House of Representatives; Senate
- legislature, three-branch, 1.96n42, 4.2.4
- legislature, unicameral
  - arguments for, 2.4.40, 2.7.9
  - disadvantages of, 2.5.22
  - in Pennsylvania and Georgia, 2.8.89
- legislatures, numerous, rotation of members in, 2.8.147
- legislatures, state, 2.2.12, 2.2.14
  - Alexander Hamilton on, 6.12n30
  - and alteration of government, 2.6.3
  - and amendment of Articles of Confederation, 2.6.9, 4.13.7
  - annihilation of, 4.2.3, 4.9.11
  - annual election of, 4.10.9
  - approbation of new Constitution by, 2.4.111–12
  - authority exceeded by, 2.7.101
  - authority of, rejected by Constitutional Convention, 6.6.22
  - cession of land to federal government by, 2.8.222
  - check on federal government, 2.9.128
  - choice of delegates to Constitutional Convention, 3.3.41
  - choice of presidential electors by, 3.11.24
  - closeness of, to people, 1.17
  - competition of, with federal government for revenue, 2.9.5, 2.9.62–63
  - and conscientious objectors, 3.8n5
  - constituents of federal Senate, 4.13.28
  - constitutional amendments proposed by, 2.5.35
  - control of, over elections, ended, 2.8.161
  - defense of, by George Clinton, 6.13.3
  - defiance of Congress by, 5.10.2
  - degradation of, by new Constitution, 5.16.17
  - disregard of, in calling up militia, 3.13.3
  - and dissolution of Confederation, 4.10.4
  - divisive influence of, 5.21.12
  - and election of U.S. senators, 2.4.49, 3.11.24, 5.13.12
  - exclusion of, from ratification process, 4.28.4
  - failure of, to consult people on Convention, 3.11.3
  - Federalist plans to destroy their power, 2.7.16, 3.4.4
  - gradual abridgment of their influence, 2.9.195
  - identification of, with people, 2.8.163, 4.13.28
  - lack of communication with one another, 3.3.3
  - lack of control over federal Senate, 3.14.15
  - mediators between House and Senate, 4.13.29
  - neglect of elections by, 4.4.4
  - opposition to their role in forming general government, 2.4.43
  - paper money and tender laws, 2.8.7
  - and pay of representatives, 2.8.42
  - possible excessive influence of, 6.13.35
  - power of, to disapprove congressional requisitions, 2.8.220
  - power to nullify federal laws, 2.8.209–11
  - presentation of federal plan to people, 4.13.10
  - prevented from judging federal plan, 4.13.21
  - proposed power of, to recall senators, 6.12.25, 6.12.29
  - reduction of, to boards of appointment, 2.7.100, 3.6.37, 3.11.24
  - regulation of elections by, 2.9.52
  - relation of, to Congress, 2.4.16, 4.10.7
  - representation in, 2.8.108, 2.8.123, 5.3.20
  - right of recall under Confederation, 2.9.201
  - rivalry of, with Congress, 4.8.1
  - role of, in raising troops, 2.9.114
  - size of, 2.9.44
  - sovereignty of, 6.1.40

- legislatures, state (*continued*)
  - and state conventions, 6.6.22
  - summer sessions of, 4.5.2
  - and taxation, 3.9.80, 5.9.7, 5.14.6
  - unlikelihood of cooperation
    - among, 4.3.6, 5.7.4
  - vulnerability of to national government, 2.4.17
- Leomitian, 4.12.1
- Letter to the Massachusetts Legislature*, 2.1 intro.
- levellers, 2.8.62
- Lexington, Battle of, 3.5.10
- libel
  - and federal jurisdiction, 3.5.3, 3.8n3
  - law of, 3.8.3
  - punishment for, 3.9.67
- liberalism, and Anti-Federalists, 1.83n7
- liberty
  - America's concern with, 5.14.23
  - America's sacrifices for, 2.7.102
  - basis of American government, 2.4.68
  - connection of, with independence, 3.9.37
  - dependence of, on will of rulers, 5.16.7, 5.16.8
  - danger of innovations respecting, 4.13.16
  - deprivation of, 4.26.10
  - endangered by proposed Constitution, 2.6.9
  - excess of, 4.10.14, 5.1.69
  - in federal districts, 2.8.224
  - Federal Farmer's definition of, 2.8.79
  - government as protector of, 5.13.2
  - jealousy concerning, 2.7.111
  - loss of, by rash action, 3.3.4
  - necessity of curbs on, 5.10.2
  - object of government, 2.3.8, 5.16.2
  - offspring of knowledge, 3.12.7
  - portion of, surrendered with formation of government, 2.9.24, 3.3.22, 3.14.2
  - precariousness of, 6.14.118–24
  - preservation of, by political society, 2.6.11
  - preservation of, by Confederation, 5.14.1, 5.14.44
  - sacrifice of, for strong government, 3.3.52, 3.9.26
  - subversion of, by proportional representation, 2.4.29
  - surrender of, by ratification of Constitution, 3.3.17
  - and the Union, 5.16.6, 6.12.2
  - William Penn's definition of, 3.12.6
- liberty, civil, relation of, to political liberty, 4.6.30
- liberty, English, 5.16.2
- liberty, natural, 5.14.2
- liberty, personal, power of government over, 2.9.26
- liberty, political, 4.6.30
- liberty factions, 3.16.9
- life
  - government as protector of, 5.13.2
  - power of government over, 2.9.26–27, 3.14.11
  - preservation of, by political society, 2.6.11
- limited government, doctrine of, 1.53–54. *See also* government, limited
- Lincoln, Abraham, 1.74–76, 3.11.56
- Lincoln, Benjamin, 6.14.30–33
- liquor tax, Robert Morris' proposal for, 6.1.45, 6.8.29
- litigation
  - between citizens of different states, 3.2.7, 4.3.9
  - between citizens of same state, 2.9.156
  - between two states, 4.5.2
  - involving states, 2.8.41
- Livingston, George, amendment of, 6.12.25–35
- Livingston, Robert, 1.44, 6.12
  - intro., 6.12n3, 6.12n5, 6.12n22, 6.12n23
- Livy, 5.1.21
- Lloyd, Thomas, 2.7n14
- loans, negotiation of, by Congress, 3.9.48
- loans, foreign, 2.9.94–95, 4.22.4, 6.1.41
- local affairs, and federal jurisdiction, 2.9.81, 2.9.150

## Index

- local government. *See* government, local
- local interests
  - disregard of, 4.6.26
  - diversity of, 4.18.2
  - Senate and, 6.12.32
- Locke, John, 3.3n8, 6.14.10
  - on alteration of legislature, 4.13.13
  - cited by Republicus, 5.13.9
  - definition of sovereignty, 6.1.40
  - on despotism, 2.6.14
  - on natural rights, 5.1.13
  - on parliamentary control of military, 5.11.7
  - on security of property, 2.6.16
  - on slaves, 4.13.22
  - on standing armies, 4.3.29
  - on usurpation and tyranny, 4.13.16
  - on utility of suspicion, 6.1.12
- Locrians, 4.12.1
- London, 2.8.222, 4.6.25
- Louis XIII (France), 5.1.39
- Louis XIV (France), 5.1.47
- Louis XVI (France), 5.1.102, 6.14.95
- Louise of Savoy, 5.1.67
- Love, John, 5.4.11, 5.4.13
- lower classes
  - federal Constitution designed to restrain, 3.4.5
  - Patrick Henry's fears for, 5.16.2
- Lowndes, Rawlins, 5.12; 1.8, vol. 5, pt. 2, intro.
  - disagreement of, with his constituents, 5.12 intro., 5.12.1
- Loyalists, 6.6n20
- Lucca, republic of, 4.25.4
- Lucius (pseud.), 3.9.5, 3.9.23
- Lucullus, 5.1.107
- Ludlow, Edmund, 6.14.10
- Ludwig, John, 3.11.56
- Lutz, Nicholas, 3.11.56
- Luther, Martin, 4.24.3
- luxury
  - and capacity for self-government, 4.18.1
  - evil effects of, 2.6.34, 3.6.45, 5.14.15
- luxury products
  - America's impoverishment and, 4.2.2, 4.9.18
  - gold exported for, 3.10.5
  - southern wealth expended on, 4.5.2
- luxury tax, 4.4.21
- Lycia, 4.12.1, 4.12n6, 5.1n13
- Lycurgus, 3.3.2, 5.1.64
- Mably (Mablé), Gabriel Bonnet de, 4.28.2, 6.2.2, 6.8.32
- McCalmont, James, 3.2.3
- McCulloch v. Maryland*, 1.82n38
- McDonald, Forrest, 1.26, 2.8 intro. n3, vol. 3 intro. n2
- Macedonian empire, 3.16.16
- McHenry, James, 2.4.22, 5.4.4, 5.4.11
- Machiavelli, Niccolò
  - on ancient Germans, 5.1.64
  - on Florentines, 5.1.19
  - [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.81
  - on preservation of traditional forms, 2.7.67
  - on stable foundation of republic, 4.28.4
- McKean, Thomas, 3.9n15
  - on bills of rights, 1.68
  - burning of, in effigy, 4.13.27
  - comment of, on Cumberland County petition, 3.9.32
  - on despotism, 1.51, 4.11.2, 4.13.21
  - and future constitutional amendment, 4.13.19
  - on importance of administration, 4.11.1
  - at Pennsylvania convention, 4.6.47, 4.6.57
  - Poplicola's reply to, 4.11 intro.
- Mackintosh, Sir James, 6.14.155, 6.14.162, 6.14n31
- Madison, James, 1.6, 1.38–39, 1.55, 2.4n39
  - associating genius, 3.10n3
  - and balanced government, 1.59–60
  - on bill of rights, 2.2n1
  - and committee on salaries, 4.17n6
  - on criticisms of Senate, 1.6n3
  - on enumeration, 5.21n8
  - on factions, 5.16n5
  - on government's dependence on religion, 5.8 intro.
  - on large republics, 1.46–47



## Index

- Madison, James (*continued*)  
 on military and taxing powers, 5.16n39  
 on nature of proposed government, 5.16n40  
 on new states controversy, 2.4n37  
 on organization of Senate, 1.59  
 on Patrick Henry, vol. 5, pt. 2, intro.  
 reply of, to Charles Pinckney, 4.6n6  
 on suffrage requirements, 1.89n14  
 on Washington letter, 4.20n2
- Maecenas, 5.10 intro., 5.10.3–4
- magistrates  
 biases of, 5.6.3  
 trustees of people, 4.3.11
- magistrates, republican  
 reliance of, on popular support, 2.9.17–18, 2.9.50
- Magna Charta, 2.9.25, 3.3.23, 3.9.67, 5.5.11  
 ancient privileges confirmed by, 2.8.77  
 repeated publication and confirmation of, 2.8.196  
 royal prerogatives limited by, 2.8.103  
 Stuart interpretation of, 5.1.10  
 superiority of, to Parliament, 6.6.28
- mail. *See* post office
- Main, Jackson Turner  
 on Cincinnatus, 6.1n21  
 on Countryman, 6.7n1  
 on democratic beliefs of Anti-Federalists, 1.40  
 Mercer address, 5.5 intro. n1  
 on name “Federalist,” 1.10  
 on separate confederacies, 1.86n2
- Maine, 2.4.44  
 dispersed population of, 2.8.114  
 prospective statehood of, 2.4.100, 2.4.106  
 representation of, in Congress, 2.8.99  
 separation of, from Massachusetts, 2.6.16
- majority  
 defense of individual against, 4.6.73  
 requirement of, for legislation, 2.2.11, 2.8.210  
 right of, to alter their government, 5.16.2  
 ruin of minority by, 5.5.6  
 subjection of, to minority, 2.5.22, 5.13.7  
 majority, democratic, threat of, to individual, 5.1.15  
 majority, three-fourths  
 for constitutional amendment, 2.5.37, 4.13.15  
 for legislation in Congress, 2.8.39  
 majority, two-thirds  
 for constitutional amendment, 3.3.2, 3.3.3  
 for legislation in Congress, 2.2.11, 2.8.39  
 for raising troops, 2.9.126  
 unlikelihood of, in Congress, 4.14.6  
 majority faction, 1.39, 1.68  
 majority rule, 2.4.110  
 Anti-Federalist opinion on, 1.39–41  
 in Congress, 2.5.40  
 in presidential elections, 2.8.177  
 principle of republicanism, 4.28.13  
 majority tyranny, 1.39, 5.1n11  
 majority vote  
 difficulty of securing, 2.8.155–56  
 as means of deciding elections, 2.8.152–54  
 Richard Henry Lee on, 5.6.5  
 mandamus counselors, 4.23.3(6)  
 Mandeville, Bernard, 1.73, 3.6.21  
 Mansfield, Earl of (William Murray)  
 American criticism of, 6.6.33  
 desire of, to extend civil law, 6.1.20  
 on general verdicts, 2.8.190  
 on suspicion, 6.1.12  
 in Woodfall case, 6.1.8
- manufactures  
 effect of proposed Constitution on, 4.3.4  
 encouragement of, 2.4.79, 4.9.9  
 importation of, 3.3.32  
 states inhibited from promoting, 3.13.5  
 taxation of, 5.14.7  
 manufactures, American, preference given to, 4.6.36  
 Many, Sentiments of, 5.20

- Marbury v. Madison*, 1.74  
 Marcus (James Iredell), 2.7n45, 2.2 intro.  
 Marcus Aurelius, 5.1.96  
 maritime affairs  
   federal jurisdiction in, 3.2.7, 5.9.3  
   regulation of, 2.7.66  
 maritime cases  
   civil law and, 3.11.39  
   and federal judiciary, 2.4.89–90, 2.9.160  
   and trial by jury, 2.7.41, 2.8.191, 3.5.5  
 marque and reprisal, letters of, 2.8.214, 4.9.22, 5.21.5  
 Marseilles, 5.1.108  
 Marshall, John, vol. 5, pt. 2, intro. n3  
   criticism of Patrick Henry by, 5.16n13  
   on Federalists and democracy, 1.90n19  
   on inducements to industry, 5.16n23  
   *Marbury v. Madison*, 1.74  
 marshals, U.S., 2.8.176  
 Martin, James, 3.11.56  
 Martin, Luther, 2.4; 2.7 intro.  
   account of Federal convention by, 2.7.149, 3.9n33  
   as Anti-Federalist, 2.4 intro.  
   on conflict of loyalties, 1.98n29  
   and convention secrecy, 4.28.8, 2.7.161  
   on creation of new states, 2.4.103  
   on definition of treason, 2.4.97, 2.4n35  
   on dissolution of Union, 1.86n2  
   on divisibility of large states, 2.4.99–107, 2.4n36, 2.4n37  
   explanation of his convention role, 2.4.115–18  
   on federal and state government, 1.33, 1.54  
   and federal use of state militia, 2.4.60  
   on importation of slaves, 2.4.70  
   on interrelationship of states, 1.13  
   letter and speech of, 2.4  
   at Maryland Convention, vol. 5, pt. 1, intro.  
   on mixed character of proposed government, 1.12  
   opposition of, to Virginia Plan, 2.4n4  
   refutation of Federalist arguments, 2.7.139  
   on state sovereignty, 1.15  
 martyrdom, 5.1.104  
 Marvell, Andrew, 5.1.73  
 Maryland, 2.4 intro., 2.4.106, 3.9.75  
   ambiguous role of governor in, 3.12.16  
   Christian religion established in, 3.12.18  
   electoral districts in, 5.3.20  
   interests of, threatened by proportional representation, 2.4.45  
   loss of control over its militia, 2.4.60  
   navigation rights of, 2.4.73  
   New Jersey resolutions and, 2.4.21  
   political system of, vol. 5, pt. 1, intro., 5.3.7  
   prohibition of slave trade in, 5.12.1  
   revenue and representation of, 4.14.2, 5.3.17  
   rules governing representatives in, 2.4.42  
   separation of law from equity in, 2.8.195  
   small state, 2.4.31  
   split in delegation of, 2.4.22, 2.4.34  
   and western territories, 6.8.18  
   wise and cautious spirit of, 4.28.9  
 Maryland Constitution, 2.4.113, 2.9n19  
 Maryland convention  
   amendments committee of, 5.4.4  
   description of, vol. 5, pt. 1, intro.  
   postponement of, 4.13.4  
   procedural rules of, 5.4.1  
   ratification of, 5.4.3  
   Samuel Chase speeches at, 5.3  
 Maryland Convention Minority, address of, 5.4  
 [Maryland] Farmer, 5.1; 2.4n45  
   on abuse of power, 1.30  
   on bill of rights, 1.40  
   on complex governments, 1.56  
   on controlling aristocracy, 1.57  
   on education, 1.21  
   on encroachment of aristocracy,

## Index

- [Maryland] Farmer (*continued*)
  - 1.52
  - motives of, questioned, 5.1.87
  - on trial by jury, 1.19
  - theoretical importance of, 1.6
  - comparison of, with John Francis Mercer Address, 5.5 intro.
- Maryland Gazette*, 2.4 intro., 5.1, 5.4
- Maryland House of Delegates, 2.4.1, 5.1 intro.
- Maryland Journal*, 5.2
- Maryland Journal and Baltimore Advertiser*, 5.1n2, 5.1n3
- Maryland legislature, 2.4 intro., 5.3.7, 5.3.8
- Maryland Senate, 2.8.89
- Mary Tudor, 5.1.41
- Mason, George, 2.2; 2.4.27
  - abuse of, 2.8.73, 2.8n52
  - on country's best defense, 1.28
  - federal principles of, 5.17n4
  - non-signer, 2.5.31, 3.2.7, 4.12.1
- Objections to the Constitution*, 2.2
- Patrick Henry on, 5.16.11
- speech of, at Virginia Convention, 5.17
- Massachusetts
  - achievements of, during Revolution, 3.9.78
  - Anti-Federalist newspapers not received in, 2.7.182
  - bill of rights in, 4.6.70, 4.6.71
  - capacity of, to produce revenue, 4.6.28
  - Christian religion established in, 3.12.18, 4.24.4
  - citizens of: allegiance of, to their commonwealth, 4.4.29; sacrifices of, for liberty, 4.3.19
  - commercial advantages of, 4.6.26
  - consensus of, on need for change, 4.3.2
  - control of taxation by, 4.4.21
  - debt of, 4.4.21, 4.17.7
  - devotion of, to freedom, 4.12.7
  - disadvantage of, under proposed government, 4.12.8
  - division of, into two districts, 2.4.100
  - dry tax in, 4.3.21
  - early rebellions in, 4.6.7
  - election of federal representatives by, 2.8.155
  - example of, to other states, 4.13.16
  - executive control over legislature in, 3.12.16
  - factional contention in, vol. 4 intro.
  - importance of commerce to, 4.6.24
  - impotence of its inferior courts, 2.9.176
  - increased assessment for, 4.6.40
  - influence of, with other states, 4.18.2
  - land value in, 3.6.45
  - large state, 2.4.17
  - manufactures in, 4.6.78
  - mistreatment of Anti-Federalists in, 4.26.16
  - Negroes in, 4.10.19
  - peace and prosperity in, 4.6.10
  - political conflicts in, 2.1 intro.
  - possible trade discrimination against, 4.6.11
  - powers given by, to convention delegates, 4.13.9
  - property lost by, during Revolution, 4.26.10
  - raising troops in, 2.9.127
  - and ratification of Constitution, 2.7 intro., 4.13.21, 6.11.10
  - rejection of Constitution by, 4.13.24
  - representation in, 4.13.23
  - representation of, 2.1 intro. n6, 2.4.45, 4.3.16, 4.13.28, 4.14.2
  - Shays' Rebellion, 2.6.16, 4.6.8
  - and slavery, 4.26.4
  - as small republic, 4.7.1
  - sovereignty of, 4.4.36
  - supreme court of, 2.8.186, 2.8.187, 2.9.176
  - unfair methods of Federalists in, 4.26.16
  - veto power in, 2.8.90, 2.8.182
  - voice of, in presidential elections, 4.28.4
- Massachusetts, chief justice of, 4.16.2
- Massachusetts Centinel*, 2.1 intro., 2.2 intro., 3.3n1, 3.6n4, 3.9.4, 4.8, 4.13, 4.15

- Massachusetts charter, 4.6.7
- Massachusetts constitution  
 alteration of, 4.13.14  
 bill of rights in, 4.4.23, 4.6.70–71, 4.13.13, 4.13.16  
 establishment of equality by, 4.26.13, 4.26n11  
 European admiration for, 4.3.9  
 federal Constitution influenced by, 2.8.61  
 jury trial provision, 4.8.2  
 points of conflict with federal Constitution, 4.4.26–27, 4.4.29, 4.13.13  
 ratification of, 4.4.27  
 search and seizure provision, 4.3.22  
 separation of powers in, 4.16.2  
 violation of, by insurgents, 6.14.26
- Massachusetts convention  
 amendments proposed by, 3.14.22, 3.16.19, vol. 4 intro., 4.18.2  
 Charles Turner's speeches at, 4.18  
 composition of, 4.7.1  
 decisiveness of, 4.12.7  
 description of, vol. 4 intro.  
 divided opinion in, 3.9.69, 4.26 intro.  
 hasty election of delegates to, 2.7.150  
 importance of, vol. 4 intro.  
 incompetence of, 4.13.20  
 minority opposition to new Constitution, 3.9.77  
 proposed adjournment of, 4.13.4, 4.13.20  
 and ratification of Constitution, 2.7.166, 4.26.16, 4.28.8  
 party spirit at, 4.13.24  
 Rufus King speech, 4.26.8  
 threats and bribery used to influence, 3.9.77  
 towns represented in, 4.4.28  
 William Symmes' speech, 4.5.6–21
- Massachusetts Gazette*, 3.9.2(14), 4.4, 4.6, 4.12, 4.19, 4.24
- Massachusetts General Court  
 address of, to people, 4.9.30  
 appointment of Constitutional Convention delegates by, 4.13.5–6  
 exclusion of judges from, 4.21.1  
 infringement of bill of rights by, 4.17.2  
 and revision of state constitution, 4.13.14  
 and Shays' rebellion, 6.14.29, 6.14.35  
 speech of Thomas Hutchinson to, 4.28.5–6  
 submission of amendments to people by, 4.13.16  
 useful measures of, 4.9.38  
 Vox Populi on, 4.4.23–24, 4.4.31
- Massachusetts House of Representatives, 4.13 intro.
- Massachusetts legislature. *See* Massachusetts General Court
- Massachusetts Provincial Congress, 4.13 intro.
- Massachusetts Senate, 2.8.89
- Massachusetts state land, 4.6.14
- Matthews, John, 5.12n2
- Maynard, Malachi. *See* Consider Arms et al.
- mechanics (artisan class), 2.8.98, 2.9.42, 4.12.2
- mercantile class, 5.1.56
- mercantile interest, 4.10.11
- mercenaries, 3.9.27, 4.3.28, 4.28.6, 5.1.75, 6.6.14
- Mercer, James, 5.5 intro. n1
- Mercer, John Fenton, 5.5 intro. n1
- Mercer, John Francis, 5.5; 2.9n29, vol. 5, pt. 1, intro.  
 list of nationalists, 3.9n33
- Maryland convention adjournment, 5.4.11
- Maryland convention amendments committee, 5.4.4
- Maryland convention candidate, 5.2n1
- merchant marine, American, 5.12.2
- merchants  
 Anti-Federalists and, 1.45–46  
 Boston, 4.9.14  
 characteristics of, 2.8.98  
 credit of, abroad, 4.6.26  
 depressed state of, 4.9.34  
 foreign, influence of, 5.1.56  
 representation for, 2.8.15, 2.9.42  
 support of, for proposed Con-

## Index

- merchants (*continued*)  
  stitution, 2.7.126
- Mexico, 5.1.47
- Middle Ages, 5.1.107
- middle (middling) class  
  inability of, to obtain redress,  
    2.4.94  
  Patrick Henry's fears for, 5.16.2  
  role of, in body politic, 6.12.18  
  victims of despotism, 6.11.27
- middle states  
  advantages of, under consolidated  
    government, 2.8.17  
  lack of interest in amendments,  
    4.15.2  
  proximity of, to seat of govern-  
    ment, 2.8.61
- Mifflin, Thomas  
  financial affairs of, 2.7 intro.  
  Pennsylvania delegate to Federal  
    convention, 3.2.5  
  public creditor, 3.9n35  
  support of, for Robert Morris,  
    2.7.172
- Miley, Jacob, 3.2.3
- military  
  in England, 5.1.42  
  state constitutions and, 5.1.44  
  subjection of, to civilian authority,  
    2.8.86, 2.8.217, 3.11.13,  
    4.22.4, 6.1.25  
  *See also* armies; army, British;  
    army, federal; army, peacetime;  
    standing army
- military appropriations, 2.8.39,  
  3.6.20  
  annual vote of, 6.1.25  
  in England, 5.1.43, 6.1.25  
  two-year limit on, 4.5.2, 4.23.3(4)
- military conscription, 2.7.75
- military courts, 2.8.191
- military establishment  
  characteristics of, 2.8.168  
  Federalist fondness for, 2.9.110  
  necessity of, for states without  
    Union, 2.5.25
- military profession  
  Alfredus on, 4.17n13  
  indolent attracted to, 2.9.110  
  suspicion of, in free states,  
    4.17.17
- military rule, 2.5.18, 2.5.30, 2.6.7,  
  2.6n4
- military service, payment in lieu of,  
  3.3.29
- military spirit, connection of, with  
  tyranny, 6.14.160
- militia, 2.7.122, 2.8.86, 3.8.3, 4.3.9,  
  6.10.5, 6.13.20  
  adequacy of, for defense, 3.5.10,  
    4.3.28, 4.17.4, 5.14.8  
  appointment of officers to, 4.3.28  
  Aristocrotis on, 3.16.9-10  
  Cincinnatus on, 6.1.25  
  command of, essential to  
    sovereignty, 6.1.40  
  Countryman on, 6.6.34  
  depredations of, 5.2.3  
  and despotic governments, 3.9.22  
  disadvantages of, 2.5.11  
  disarming of, 2.7.134, 3.16.17  
  execution of laws by, 2.9.50  
  federal control of, 2.4.60, 2.6.35,  
    2.7.75, 2.9.6, 2.9.9, 3.3.29,  
    3.16.9, 4.3.27, 5.16.2, 6.2.2  
  incompatibility of, with standing  
    army, 4.3.28  
  natural support of free govern-  
    ment, 2.5.11, 2.9.29  
  neutralization of, 5.16.2  
  in New York, and federal con-  
    stitutions, 6.9.24-25  
  organizing, arming, and dis-  
    ciplining of, 2.4.61  
  Pennsylvania Convention Minor-  
    ity on, 3.11.13  
  popular character of, 2.8.217  
  president as commander-in-chief  
    of, 2.4.85-86  
  relation of, to states, 1.89n60  
  Samuel Chase on, 5.3.17  
  state and federal responsibilities,  
    2.8.19  
  state constitutions, 2.9n21  
  state control of, 3.11.13, 4.6.75,  
    5.4.7  
  state obligation to furnish, 4.9.22  
  states' defense against national  
    government, 2.4.62  
  states' loss of control over,  
    3.13.5, 3.14.18, 3.14.19, 4.1.2  
  states' obligation to maintain,  
    2.8.84  
  time limit on out-of-state service,  
    2.8.217  
  training of, 3.13.3

- militia (*continued*)
  - under unpopular governments, 3.9.28
  - unwilling instruments of tyranny, 3.11.54
  - use of, to execute treaties, 3.16.11
  - war record of, 4.3.28
  - weakening of, by national government, 3.9.56
- militia, active, 3.16.9, 3.16.17
- militia, federal, 3.11.52, 4.2n5, 5.21.17
- militia, inactive, 3.16.9, 3.16.12
- militia, Pennsylvania, 3.11.54
- militia, select, 2.7.134, 2.8.39, 2.8.217, 6.6.34
- militia, Vermont, 4.6.8
- militia duty, 3.9.11, 3.9.64
- militia officers
  - attachment of, to Congress, 4.13.29
  - oath of allegiance sworn by, 5.16.27
- Milton, John, 6.1.12, 6.14.10
- ministerial agents, 3.14.4, 3.14.15-21
- ministers of gospel, 2.7.166, 4.17.5
- minorities, obstruction of amendments by, 5.16.2
- minority
  - bound by acts of majority, 2.4.110
  - dictation of constitution by, 4.20.3
  - equality of, with majority, 2.5.22
  - government of majority by, 2.7.129, 5.13.7
  - ruin of majority by, 5.5.6
- minority opposition to Declaration of Independence, 3.9.56
- Minority of the Pennsylvania House of Representatives, Address of*, 3.2, *See also* Pennsylvania House Minority
- Mirabeau, marquis de, 5.1.96
- miracles, 4.24n1
- Mississippi Bubble, 6.8.34
- Mississippi River
  - right to navigate, 5.5.7
  - sale of lands on, 4.6.27
  - U.S. claim to, 5.16 intro.
  - western boundary, 2.4.101, 4.12.5
- mixed government, 1.53-63, 5.1.69, 6.8.1
- mixed system. *See* federalism, new
- mob, characteristics of, 5.1.58
- mob violence in Pennsylvania legislature, 3.2.3, 3.9.75, 3.11.8, 3.14.22
- moderation, political, 2.6.15, 5.1.53
- Mohammedanism, 2.9.108
- Mohammedans, 2.8.150, 4.14.3
- monarchical tendency, 2.4.24
- monarchists, 3.9.75
- monarchy, 2.2.15, 5.14.36
  - advocates of, 2.4 intro.
  - in ancient Rome, 5.14.21
  - antipathy to, in America, 6.14.41
  - characteristics of, 4.28.8
  - combination of, with aristocracy 3.9.62
  - correspondence of, with one aspect of human nature, 5.18.6
  - essential difference of, from democracy, 3.12.11
  - and evils of aristocracy, 5.1.94
  - generation of, by new Constitution, 5.6.2, 5.18.5
  - honor and, 4.13.21
  - incompatibility of, with federal government, 3.14.9
  - John Adams' partiality for, 6.14.106, 6.14.108-9
  - likely result of adopting Constitution, 3.3.20, 3.5.13
  - love of, in America, 2.8.112
  - majority in, favorable to individual, 5.1.15
  - [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.24, 5.1.25
  - possible future establishment of, 4.13.19
  - preferability of to proposed government, 5.16.7
  - prince and legislature in, 5.14.36
  - protector of wealthy, 5.1.95
  - republican forms used to conceal, 4.28.4
  - result of consolidated government, 2.6.14, 3.14.9
  - Samuel's warning against, 6.12.7
  - and security for popular rights, 6.8.14-15
  - suitability of, to "middling" territory, 2.7.94
- monarchy, absolute, 4.11.4
- monarchy, British, 5.1.96, 5.21.13. *See also* king, British

- monarchy, despotic, 3.9.60. *See also* despotism
- monarchy, elective, 2.4.82, 3.3.31
  - consequences of, 4.10.12
  - in Germany, 5.1.74
  - and hereditary monarchy, 5.1.25
  - papacy as, 4.24.3
- monarchy, French, 5.21.13
- monarchy, limited
  - advantages of, 4.6.50
  - proposed government stronger than, 4.28.13
  - Thomas McKean on, 4.11.4
  - United States too extensive for, 2.8.75
- money
  - appropriation of, 2.8.39
  - changes in value of, 4.17.6
  - inability of constitutional change to supply, 5.16.12
  - power to coin, 2.4.76, 4.6.75, 5.3.10, 5.3.11
  - Publius on, 2.9n45
  - scarcity of, 2.8.188
  - relationship of, to military, 5.14.15
  - vital principle of body politic, 5.16n36
  - and war, 2.5.18
- money, Continental, redemption of, 2.1 intro.
- money, gold and silver. *See* specie
- money, paper
  - changes in value of, 2.8.205
  - corrupting influence of, 5.1.112
  - Countryman on, 6.7.1
  - evil effects of, 4.18.1
  - inflated value of, 4.18.2
  - introduction of, during Revolution, 2.8.6
  - misuse of, by state governments, 2.9.180
  - Patrick Henry on, 5.16.9
  - payment of public debt in, 6.1.47
  - possible abuse of, 3.13.5
  - product of weak government, 1.42
  - prohibition of, 2.4.70, 2.4.75, 4.17.8
  - surfeit of, 2.8.206
  - utility of, to states, 5.12.2
  - William Symmes on, 4.5.2
  - See also* credit, bills of
- money, public
  - embezzlement of, 3.9.82, 5.14.15
  - president and, 2.8.179
- money bills, 2.2.3, 3.6.41, 6.1.27
- Monk, George, 2.7.108
- monopolies
  - danger of, to American seaports, 4.6.65
  - early American prejudice against, 6.14.47
  - Elbridge Gerry's opposition to, 2.1 intro. n6
  - prohibition of, 2.7.55, 2.8.229, 4.6.35, 4.6.42, 4.6.75
  - right of Congress to grant, 4.6.53
  - Son of Liberty on, 6.2.2
- Monroe, James, 5.21
  - and balanced government theory, 1.59
  - on boundary between federal and state responsibility, 5.21n9
  - on consolidation, 1.11
  - on delineation of state and federal powers, 1.34
  - on dual sovereignties, 1.81n32
  - mission of, to France, 6.14.94-95
  - nationalism of, 5.21 intro.
  - in ratification debate, 5.21 intro.
  - reliance of, on voluntarism, 1.25
  - Some Observations on the Constitution*, 5.21
- Montagu, Edward Wortley
  - on ancient republics, 6.8.22
  - on lessons of history, 6.8.33
  - on mixed governments, 6.8.1
  - on plain speaking, 6.8.21
- Montesquieu, baron de (Charles de Secondat), 2.4.44, 2.7.33
  - Aristides on, 5.1n13
  - on avoidance of excess, 5.1.68
  - balance of monarchical, aristocratic, and democratic features, 6.8.17
  - Cato's knowledge of, 2.6 intro. n7
  - on combining powers of legislation and enforcement, 5.15n2
  - on constitutional aristocracy, 2.8.97
  - on delegation of power, 5.16.14
  - on distinctions raised by vanity, 6.8.31
  - on duration of office, 2.6.25
  - on effect of impoverishment,

## Index

- Montesquieu (*continued*)  
 6.8.35  
 on elections, 2.6.36, 2.8.148,  
 3.6.17, 5.4.10  
 on federal republics, 6.12.5  
 on free agents, 2.9.39  
 on government and popular cus-  
 toms, 3.6.8  
 on imaginary wants of govern-  
 ment, 3.6.19  
 on large republics, 2.9.11  
 on legislation and taxation, 2.7.11  
 on loss of natural equality, 5.1.93  
 misquoted by Old Whig, 3.3n8  
 on monarchy, 3.11.17, 5.10.4,  
 5.10n10, 6.8.18  
 on natural descent to evil, 2.6.48  
 on natural rights doctrine, 5.1.13  
 Noah Webster's criticism of,  
 3.6n10  
 on parliamentary control of mili-  
 tary, 5.11.7  
 on participation of people in gov-  
 ernment, 2.8.97  
 [Pennsylvania] Farmer's argu-  
 ment modeled on, 3.14 intro.  
 on political liberty, 2.6.15  
 on popular suffrage, 3.11.26  
 on republican virtues, 1.73, 6.8.19  
 on republics, monarchies, and des-  
 potism, 4.13.21  
 Richard Henry Lee on, 5.6.1  
 on separation of powers, 3.6.23,  
 3.11.44, 3.12.13, 5.15.1  
 on small republics, 2.6.13, 2.6n11,  
 6.8.1n  
 on sovereign power of legislature,  
 3.3.11, 3.3n8  
 on sovereignty, 2.7.73, 3.11.26  
 on threats to English liberty,  
 2.6.43, 4.17.22  
 on union of legislative and execu-  
 tive powers, 6.1.32  
 on usefulness of suspicion, 6.1.12  
 Montezuma (pseud.), 3.4  
 Montgomery, Richard, 4.3.14  
 morality, 4.18.2  
 education of people in, 5.18.9  
 influence of government on, 3.9.9  
 Morison, Samuel Eliot, 2.1 intro.  
 Morris, Gouverneur, 2.9n29  
 delegate to Constitutional Con-  
 vention, 3.2.5  
 mission of, to France, 6.14.93,  
 6.14.95  
 on need for speedy ratification,  
 6.1n32  
 opposition of, to rotation, 6.12n25  
 and Robert Morris, 2.7.136  
 Morris, Robert (Financier)  
 activities of, during Revolution,  
 2.7.168  
 appointed delegate to Federal  
 convention, 3.2.5  
 charged with fraud, 2.7.171  
 dedication to, by Aristocrotis,  
 3.16.1  
 financial affairs of, 2.7 intro.  
 imposts injurious to, 3.16.17  
 monopolizing spirit of, 2.7.127  
 Pelatiah Webster on, 6.6.48  
 and poll tax, 5.3.17  
 public creditor, 3.9n35  
 revenue proposal of, 6.1.45,  
 6.8.29  
 and Thomas Mifflin, 2.7.172  
 "Morris's notes," 6.7.1  
 Moses, 4.6.68, 5.6.1  
 murder, 2.9.86, 4.4.19  
 mutiny, 3.9.30  
 mutiny laws, 5.1.43, 5.4.6, 5.11.6  
 names  
 confusion of, with essences,  
 5.14.20  
 mistaken trust in, 6.3.4, 6.3.8;  
 Cato Uticensis on, 5.7.2; Cen-  
 tinel on, 2.7.3, 2.7.32-33; Con-  
 sider Arms et al. on, 4.26.15;  
 John DeWitt on, 4.3.3; Mercy  
 Warren on, 6.14.111; Officer of  
 the Late Continental Army on,  
 3.8.2; [Pennsylvania] Farmer  
 on, 3.14.23; Sidney on, 6.8.5;  
 Yeomanry of Massachusetts  
 on, 4.19.2  
 nation, Anti-Federalist use of word,  
 1.4n4  
 national, Federalist reluctance to  
 use word, 2.4.43  
 national character, 4.1.n1  
 national government, 5.1.17  
 arbiter among states, 2.5.19  
 conflict of, with state govern-  
 ments, 2.4.58  
 contrast of, with federal govern-



## Index

- national government (*continued*)  
 ment, 2.4.39, 2.4.83, 5.1.50  
 control of, over militia, 2.4.62  
 control of, over slave trade, 2.4.67  
 division of, into three branches,  
 2.4.16  
 expense of, 2.3.7  
 fragility of, 2.4.44  
 impracticality and dangers of,  
 2.2.3, 2.2.7  
 intention of Framers, 3.14.20  
 [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.52  
 and new Constitution, 2.8.133  
 opposition to, 2.4.44  
 Patrick Henry on, 5.16.2  
 replacement of Confederation by,  
 5.3.2  
 senators as agents of, 2.4.42  
 states excluded from, 2.5.21  
 and suspension of Habeas Corpus  
 Act, 2.4.72  
 unsuited to extensive territory,  
 5.3.4  
*See also* federal government
- nationalism, 5.21 intro.  
 nationality, habits of, 4.7n1  
 nationhood, 2.8n7; Anti-Federalist  
 attitude toward, 1.24-25  
 nation-state system, [Maryland]  
 Farmer on, 5.1.108, 5.1.109  
 nations, law of, 2.5.9, 2.9.168-69,  
 6.1.5  
 Native of Virginia (pseud.), 5.21n5  
 naturalization, 1.19-20, 2.8.214,  
 4.6.34, 4.6.42, 6.13.20  
 Blackstone on, 4.13.26  
 federal control over, 2.8.10,  
 2.8.35  
 as means of extending federal  
 power, 2.8.224  
 in New York state, 6.9.30  
 nature, law of (natural law), 2.9.24,  
 5.13.2, 5.18.9  
 nature, state of, 2.4.29, 3.1.1., 3.1.3,  
 3.1n3, 3.8n1, 4.6.68  
 absence of government, 2.4.39  
 American people in, 6.9.4  
 historical evidence for, 4.6.68  
 individuals in, 2.9.24, 3.14.6  
 insecurity of human rights in,  
 5.14.2  
 right to remain in, 4.26.11  
 source of civil liberty, 5.13.2  
 unlikelyhood of reversion to, 4.3.6  
 navies, state, 3.9.29, 5.14.11  
 navigation acts, 2.2 intro., 2.2.10,  
 2.4.67, 4.9.14, 4.9.22, 5.4.7  
 navy, British, 5.16.25  
 navy, federal  
 congressional power to maintain,  
 4.23.3(4)  
 expense of, 3.9.22, 4.23.3(4)  
 interest of northern states in,  
 5.12.4  
 and local governments, 2.8.218  
 [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.46  
 necessity of, 3.9.45, 6.1.24  
 power of president to fill vacan-  
 cies in, 5.10.2  
 president as commander of,  
 2.4.85-86  
 and protection of American com-  
 merce, 3.9.44  
 necessary and proper clause, 1.28,  
 1.66, 2.7.122, 2.7n92, 2.8.49,  
 2.9.5, 2.9.8-9, 2.9.57, 5.1.113  
 Cincinnatus on, 6.1.24  
 Countryman on, 6.7.13  
 and federal judicial power, 4.6.52  
 Friend to the Rights of the People  
 on, 4.23.3(4)  
 interests of rulers protected by,  
 3.16.16n  
 key to spirit of proposed govern-  
 ment, 2.9.153  
 and loose interpretation of Con-  
 stitution, 2.9.141  
 Pennsylvania Convention Minor-  
 ity on, 3.11.21  
 source of undefined and limitless  
 power, 3.3.12  
 Sydney on, 6.9.13, 6.9.23  
 taxing power and, 3.14.18  
 tyrannical grant, 3.6.32  
 vagueness of, 2.9.57, 2.9.60  
 necessities, taxation of, 2.9.71  
 negative, of Senate on president,  
 4.3.12. *See also* veto power  
 negative, double, 3.4.2  
 negative, partial, 2.8.182  
 negative, presidential, unlikelyhood  
 of its being exercised, 3.9.65  
 negative, royal, 5.15.1  
 Negroes  
 forcible importation of, 4.23.3(5)  
 Framers' avoidance of word,

- Negroes (*continued*)  
 4.2.3, 4.2.8  
 in Massachusetts, 4.10.19  
 Nehemiah, 6.8.36  
 Nelson, Thomas, 2.8n5  
 nepotism, 2.8.120, 2.8.178, 2.9.42  
 Nero, example of despotism, 2.7.36,  
 3.9.33, 3.10.1, 4.11.2, 4.13.10,  
 4.23.3(1), 5.1.103, 5.15.1  
 Netherlands, United Provinces of  
 the, 2.4.30, 5.10.2  
 checks on central government in,  
 2.8.210  
 comparison of, with United  
 States, 2.6.4  
 internal taxation in, 2.8.36  
 predominance of Holland in,  
 3.6.14  
*See also* Holland  
 neutrality  
 preservation of, 6.14.177  
 Thomas Paine on, 3.9.44  
 Washington's proclamation of,  
 6.14.92  
 Nevins, Allan, 5.16 intro.  
 "new arrangement" (post office),  
 2.7.182, 2.7n68  
 New England  
 discrimination against, 4.14.2  
 freemen of, 3.9.77  
 original soundness of govern-  
 ments in, 5.1.113  
 proposed government unsuited to,  
 4.21.1  
 tax apportionment injurious to,  
 4.10.19  
 New England (pseud.), 2.8 intro.,  
 4.12n16  
 New England courts, 2.8.195  
 New England Damper (pseud.),  
 4.12.8  
 New England delegates, solidarity  
 of, in Old Congress, 5.7.8  
 New Federalism. *See* Federalism, New  
 New Hampshire, 2.4.100, 2.9.18  
 attack on legislature of, 4.6.8  
 executive control of legislature in,  
 3.12.16  
 land titles in, 4.6.29  
 ratification by, vol. 5, pt. 2, intro.  
 n5  
 representation of, 4.13.28, 4.14.2  
 New Hampshire convention  
 adjournment of, 3.14.22, 3.16.19  
 Federalist strategy at, vol. 4 intro.  
 n4  
 Friend of the Republic address,  
 4.23.4-8  
 Friend to the Rights of the People  
 Address, 4.23.3(9)  
 New Hampshire Court of Common  
 Pleas, 4.17 intro.  
 [New Hampshire] Farmer, 4.17  
 charges of, called groundless,  
 4.17.19  
 on juries and Supreme Court,  
 3.5n6  
 support of, for Beard thesis,  
 4.10n4  
 New Hampshire General Court,  
 4.23.3(3)  
 New Haven, Connecticut, 2.7.181,  
 4.2.10  
 New Jersey  
 religious restrictions in, 3.12.18  
 representation of, 4.14.2  
 seduction of, by hope of gain,  
 4.28.10  
 small state, 2.4.31  
 New Jersey convention, 4.12.8  
 New Jersey resolutions, 2.4 intro.  
 factions opposed to, 2.4.27  
 rejection of, 2.4.28  
 and Virginia plan, 2.4.21  
 Newport Man (pseud.), 4.25  
*Newport Mercury*, 4.25  
 newspapers  
 alleged suppression of, 2.7.163,  
 2.7n68  
 anonymous articles in, 3.9.2-3  
 and delivery of mail, 2.7n68  
 duties on, 2.9.59  
 Federalist articles published in,  
 5.2.1  
 Federalist attempts to monop-  
 olize, 4.3.10  
 good and bad points of, 2.8.203  
 government licensing of, 3.3.15  
 hindrance to free circulation of,  
 2.7.133, 2.7.144, 2.7.163  
 made vehicles of deception,  
 3.14.23  
 monopolized by friends of gov-  
 ernment, 3.16.12  
 nonpartisan, 3.9.23

## Index

- newspapers (*continued*)
  - people's dependence on, for information, 4.13.10
  - reports of, on Constitutional Convention, 2.4.36
  - supposed dangers of, 3.3.3
- newspapers, Massachusetts, 3.9.77
- newspapers, Philadelphia, 3.16.19
- New York, 5.1.113
  - capacity of, to produce revenue, 4.6.28
  - colonial politics in, 6.9.18
  - dangers to, from its neighbors, 6.12.3
  - debt of, 4.6.10
  - dispute of, with Connecticut, 4.12.10
  - division of, over ratification, 6.13.42
  - governor's role in, 6.9.11, 6.9.24
  - John Francis Mercer's appeal to, 5.5.12
  - and New Jersey resolutions, 2.4.21
  - partial negative in, 2.8.182
  - possibility of its exclusion from Union, 6.13.37-39
  - possible coercion of, 4.6.12
  - postponement of state convention in, 4.13.4
  - relations of, with Five Nations, 6.9.9
  - representation of, 2.9.42, 4.14.2
  - second convention urged for, 6.6.49
  - separation of law and equity, 2.8.195
  - state and local officials in, 6.9.26
  - supreme court of, 2.8.90, 2.8.186, 2.8.187, 6.9.11
  - tax contribution of, 3.9.86, 4.14.1
  - Vermont statehood and, 4.23.3(8)
  - veto power in, 2.8.89
  - voting in, 2.8.89, 6.9.17
- New York assembly, 1.9, 2.3 intro., 2.3.8, 6.6.6, 6.9.11, 6.9.16
- New York constitution, 6.6.30, 6.9.6-30, 6.11.33
- New York convention, 5.5 intro., vol. 6, pt. 1, intro., 6.12, 6.13
- New York Journal*, 2.3 intro., 2.6, 2.9, 5.11 intro., 6.1, 6.2, 6.3, 6.4, 6.5, 6.6, 6.7, 6.9, 6.10
- New York senate, 2.8.89, 6.9.11
- Nicholas, George, 5.17 intro.
- Nicholas, Wilson, 1.27, 2.5 intro.
- Nicholson, Thomas, 2.2 intro.
- Nimrod, 4.6.68
- nobility, hereditary
  - check on representative government, 5.5.11
  - in Great Britain, 2.7.7
  - Patrick Henry on, 5.16.14
- nobility, Swedish, 5.1.35
- nobility, titles of
  - compatibility of, with republicanism, 6.14.153-55
  - prohibition of, 1.66, 2.8.86, 2.8.198, 2.9.30, 4.2.10, 4.6.66, 5.10.4, 6.7.8
- nomination, presidential power of, 2.4.48, 2.4.86, 2.6.25
- None of the Well-Born Conspirators (*pseud.*), 3.15
- Normans, English liberties and, 2.8.103, 2.8.191, 4.28.4
- North, Lord (Frederick North), 3.15.1, 5.12.2, 6.6.33
- North America, Bank of, 1.82n35
- North Carolina
  - indivisibility of, 2.4.101-2
  - rejection of federal Constitution by, 6.14.50
  - religious restrictions in, 3.12.18
  - representation of, 2.4.45, 4.14.2
  - separatist tendencies in, 2.4.44
  - slave trade and, 2.4.65, 5.12.1
  - Virginia and, 5.16.12
  - voter qualifications in, 2.8.89
- North Carolina constitution, 2.9n20
- northern states
  - advantage of, in Congress, 5.6.3
  - aristocratic juntas in, 2.7.65
  - carriers for southern products, 4.9.14
  - coercion of, by southern majority, 4.2.11
  - discrimination against, 4.5.2
  - inhabitants of, 4.6.48
  - interests of, 2.2.11
  - and liberty, 2.6.18, 2.6n13
  - and slave trade, 4.27.5, 5.12.1, 6.6.13
- Nova Scotia, 2.8.224, 4.6.46, 4.17.15, 6.7.12
- Noy, William, 2.7.112

- oaths
  - conflicts between state and federal, 4.4.37–38, 4.4n10, 6.7.9, 6.9.25
  - false, 4.3.21
  - papal absolution from, 4.24.5
  - to support federal Constitution, 2.7.168, 2.9.31, 4.4.34, 4.14.6
  - to support Massachusetts constitution, 4.4.29, 4.4.36
  - sworn by presidential councillors, 5.6.5
  - warrants supported by, 4.3.22
- Observer (pseud.), 6.4
- office
  - bias arising from expectation of, 2.8.120
  - congressmen influenced by expectation of, 2.8.100
  - temptations of, 2.8.119
- officeholders, tenacity of, in protecting their rights, 2.9.142
- Officer of the Late Continental Army (pseud.), 3.8. *See also* Findley, William
- officers, army, personal loyalty of to president, 5.9.11
- officers, federal. *See* federal officials
- office seekers
  - attacks of, on their opponents, 5.1.71
  - hopes of, from new government, 2.7.116, 2.8.3, 3.3.40, 3.9.88, 6.12.5
- Ohio River, 2.4.102, 4.6.27
- Oldfield, Mrs. C. Chase, 5.3 intro.
- Old Patriots of 1775, 4.7.1, 4.12.4
- Old Testament, 4.6.72
- Old Whig (pseud.), 3.3; 3.3n9, 3.16.3, 5.3.18
  - on critical state of the country, 1.26
  - Federalist hatred of, 3.9.6
  - vindication of Anti-Federalist position by, 3.9.16
- oligarchy, 3.16.16, 4.28.4, 5.1.52, 5.6.2
- “omnipotent” clause, 4.13.28. *See also* necessary and proper clause
- One of the Common People (pseud.), 4.8
- One of the Four Thousand (pseud.), 2.7n2
- One of the Middle Interest, 4.8 intro., 4.8.1
- One of the People, 3.6n4
- Oothoudt, Henry, 6.10.1
- opinion, public, tyranny of, 6.14.169
- oppression, local, federal Constitution’s failure to prevent, 5.11.2
- oracles, 4.12.6, 4.24n1
- Orange, Prince and Princess of. *See* William III of England
- orders, preservation of, and separation of powers, 1.59
- original jurisdiction of federal courts, 4.23.3(7)
- Orth, Adam, 3.11.56
- Osgood, Peter, 4.5.1
- Oswald, Eleazar, 2.7.163, 2.7n97
- Otho (emperor), 4.12.4
- Otis, James, 4.28 intro., 6.14.7
- outlaws, 5.16.5
- Oxford, Earl of (Robert Harley), 3.5.10
- Paca, William
  - Aristides–[Maryland] Farmer debate, 5.1n58
  - at Maryland convention, 5 intro., 5.4.3–4, 5.4.11
- pacifists. *See* conscientious objectors
- Padilla, Juan Lopez de, 4.28.12
- pagans, eligibility of, for public office, 2.8.150, 4.14.3, 4.22.4
- Paine, Thomas, 2.7.177, 3.9.44
- panic, Federalist attempts to spread, 6.11.5
- papists. *See* Roman Catholics
- pardoning power, 2.8.229, 2.9.20, 4.4.39
  - danger of, 2.2.9, 2.4.85, 2.5.41, 2.6.31
  - means of covering for treason, 2.7.23, 2.7.51, 3.11.45
- pardons, granted before conviction, 5.3.17
- Paris, Treaty of (1783), 5.12.2, 5.12n7
- Parlement of Paris, 2.7.69
- Parliament
  - abuse of power by, 4.6.60
  - and Anglo-French treaty of 1786,

## Index

### Parliament (*continued*)

3.11.43  
 approval of civil list by, 5.9.7  
 approval of treaties by, 3.3.14,  
     5.12.1  
 and Bill of Rights, 5.1.7  
 check of, on despotic power,  
     6.8.39  
 comparison of, with Congress,  
     3.3.12, 4.6.53  
 corruption of, by king, 4.2.3, 4.2.5  
 court interest in, 5.9.9  
 and dispute over standing armies,  
     2.9.123  
 dissention between Lords and  
     Commons, 2.4.51  
 dissolution of, by Cromwell,  
     5.1.73, 5.10.2  
 foreigners excluded from, 4.13.26  
 frequent elections for, 2.7.112  
 growth of its power, 2.8.104  
 and habeas corpus benefits,  
     2.8.200  
 Hume on errors of, 4.3.28  
 increase in members' term of  
     office, 2.7.74  
 interpretation of Constitution by,  
     2.9.193  
 and John Hampden case, 5.1.67  
 and judiciary, 2.9.187  
 Massachusetts' dispute with,  
     4.28.6  
 and power to raise armies, 2.8.220  
 representation in, 4.6.17, 4.15.6  
 as representative of American  
     colonies, 4.3.16, 5.12.2  
 and royal negative, 3.12.17  
 size of, 2.8.136, 4.13.25  
 sovereignty of, 3.14.5  
 taxation of colonies by, 2.7.36,  
     2.7.40  
*See also* House of Commons;  
     House of Lords  
 Parliament, Long, 2.7.74, 4.23.3(1)  
 Parliament, Scottish, 6.4.1  
 parliaments, triennial and septen-  
     nial, 5.13.4  
 Parsons, Theophilus, 4.13n27,  
     4.18n1  
 parties, 4.15.6, 5.1n35, 5.1n40,  
     6.9.18.  
*See also* factions  
 parties, extreme, 2.8n2

party divisions, 6.14.112-13  
 party spirit at Massachusetts con-  
     vention, 4.13.24  
 party strife in Pennsylvania, 3.2n1  
 Pascal, Blaise, 5.1.68  
 passions, restraint of, by govern-  
     ment, 5.13.2, 5.18.8  
 Paterson, Alexander, 2.7.132  
 Paterson, William, 1.13, 1.82n40,  
     2.4.21  
 patricians, 2.8.106  
 Patriotic Citizen (pseud.), 1.90n19  
 patriotism, 2.9.47, 3.6n10, 4.18.1,  
     6.8.7  
 patronage, 2.9.42  
 Paul (Apostle), 2.9.52, 6.8.32, 6.11.1  
 peace  
     breaches of, 2.9.151  
     growing durability of, 5.1.109  
     insecurity of, under Confedera-  
         tion, 2.5.16  
     internal, 2.9.150  
     and war, federal power over,  
         2.8.10, 2.8.35, 4.5.2  
 Peale, Charles Wilson, 3.8.5  
 speculation, 2.7.171, 4.13.28  
 peers, trial by, 4.15.2  
 Pelham, Massachusetts, 6.14.30-32  
 penalties, actions for, 3.3.16  
 penalties, criminal, 5.16.36  
 Pendleton, Edmund, 5.16n8  
 Penn, William, estate of, 6.8.38  
 Penn, William (pseud.), 3.12  
     on liberty of conscience, 1.85n48  
 Pennsylvania  
     Anti-Federalists in, 2.7 intro.,  
         2.7.179, vol. 3 intro.  
     commercial disadvantages of,  
         4.6.26  
     compliance of, with requisitions,  
         3.9.84  
     delegation of, to Constitutional  
         Convention, 2.8.7, vol. 3 intro.,  
         3.1.2  
     desire for amendments in, 4.6.12  
     disadvantages of, under proposed  
         system, 2.7.170, 3.9.85  
     electorate of, 3.11.10  
     enrichment of, at expense of other  
         states, 4.6.53  
     Federalist maneuvers in, 6.3.11  
     governmental innovations in,  
         5.1.113

- Pennsylvania (*continued*)  
immigration policy of, 4.6.34  
interference with press in, 2.7 intro.  
large state, 2.4.17, 2.4.31  
opposition to new Constitution in, 3.9.69, vol. 4 intro., 4.13.27  
pacifist groups in, 3.9.11  
party animosities in, 3.2n1  
and payment of national debt, 4.6.10  
political changes in, 3.3.51  
proprietary government of, vol. 3 intro., 6.6.17  
raising troops in, 2.9.127  
ratification of Constitution in, vol. 3 intro., 3.16.17n, 4.28.9, 5.16.8  
religious example of, 5.8.5  
religious restrictions in, 3.12.18  
representation of, 2.4.45, 3.11.49, 4.14.2  
Robert Morris' influence in, 6.6.48  
separatist tendencies in, 2.4.44  
unicameral legislature of, 2.8.89  
Pennsylvania, University of, 3.9 intro.  
Pennsylvania Assembly, 2.2 intro. and Articles of Confederation, 3.1.3  
complaint of, to Congress, 2.7.183n  
control of, over legislation, 3.12.16  
and Constitutional Convention, 3.2.2  
identification of, with people, 3.11.48  
inroads of, on other branches of government, 3.3.11  
members of, coerced by mob, 3.2.3, 3.9.75, 3.11.8  
minority efforts to influence, 3.11.4  
report of convention delegates to, 3.1.3  
Republican (Federalist) control of, 3.2n1  
and state convention, 3.11.9  
violation of trust by, 3.14.22  
Pennsylvania constitution (1776), 1.91n34  
amendment procedure for, 2.7.70n  
Benjamin Franklin and, 3.8.10  
campaign against, 2.7.160  
conspiracy to destroy, 2.7.129, 3.11.3  
excellence of, 2.7.9, 2.7.128–29  
and freedom of press, 3.3.15, 3.9.50  
legislators' oath to support, 3.11.8  
protection for rights of conscience, 3.11.53  
on representatives, 1.44  
standing armies prohibited by, 6.1.37  
Pennsylvania convention, 3.8.1, 4.12.8  
arbitrary proceedings of, 3.9.31  
contemptuous treatment of delegates at, 3.9.33  
hasty election of, 2.7.70, 3.9.74, 3.14.22  
illegality of, 3.11.9  
intimidation of electors for, 3.11.11  
postponement of elections because of, 3.2.3  
proposal to summon, 3.11.8  
purpose of, 3.9n15  
vote count, 3.11.10  
Pennsylvania Convention Minority, 3.11; 2.7 intro. n3, 2.7.182, 3.9.39, 3.9.60  
Freeman's address to, 3.14.1  
on increase of federal powers, 3.14.11  
objections of, excluded from minutes, 3.11.12, 3.14.22  
proposal of, on liberty of conscience, 1.64  
refusal of, to sign ratification, 3.11.14  
[Pennsylvania] Farmer, 3.14; 3.11 intro. n1  
contribution of, to discussion of federalism, 3.14n5  
and Deliberator, 3.13 intro. on "new federalism," 1.36  
*Pennsylvania Gazette*, 3.11 intro. n1  
*Pennsylvania Herald*, 2.7.178, 3.5, 3.6 intro., 3.9.32, 4.11n1  
fate of, uncertain, 2.7.156  
publication of convention debates by, 3.9.55

- Pennsylvania Herald (*cont.*)  
 subscriber pressure against, 2.7.151
- Pennsylvania Historical Society, 5.5 intro.
- Pennsylvania House Minority, 3.2; 4.6.1, 3.6.11
- Pennsylvania Mechanic (*pseud.*), 3.9.5, 3.9.51, 3.9.52  
 controversy over pseudonymous writings, 3.9.2, 3.9n1
- Pennsylvania Packet*, 2.7.161, 2.7n14, 3.2 intro., 3.11, 3.13.1, 4.11n1
- pensioners, 4.13.21, 4.19.1
- pensions, 3.16.1
- people  
 abolition of their franchise, 4.26.5  
 appeal to advised against, 5.21.22  
 authority of, 3.1n3  
 as basis of proposed government, 1.16  
 confidence of, in government, 1.51–52, 2.9.18, 2.9.48, 3.9.2  
 confinement of, within their proper sphere, 3.16.3  
 conflict of their interests with those of rulers, 2.9.108  
 competence of, to know what is best for them, 3.3.44  
 distance of Senate from, 6.1.27  
 Federalist insults to, 4.6.58  
 Framers' claim to speak for, 5.16.1  
 government as servant of, 5.13.2  
 guardians of their own rights, 2.1.7  
 inability of, to obtain redress, 2.4.94  
 inability of, to support new government, 4.9.34  
 incorruptibility of, 5.1.80  
 indifference of, to public affairs, 1.53, 2.8.147, 6.8.30  
 indignation of, predicted, 4.13.24  
 loss by, of powers not expressly reserved, 2.8.50  
 made powerless by new Constitution, 5.16.2  
 only effective check on government, 2.7.7  
 only source of right to govern, 2.6.8, 2.7.69, 2.9.2, 2.9.193, 5.3.15, 5.14.28, 6.9.6  
 Preamble's use of word, 6.1.40  
 resignation of right of suffrage by, 5.13.13  
 responsibility of government to, 1.14, 1.27  
 right of, to change their government, 2.8.208, 5.4.7, 6.14.43  
 right of, to be consulted, 3.3.41  
 right of, to propose amendments, 5.3.3  
 right of, to reverse decisions of their representatives, 4.28.3  
 sovereignty of, 2.6n6  
 supervisors of nation's conduct, 2.6.3  
 supreme power of, 2.8.76  
 trust of, in their accustomed leaders, 5.5.1  
 undelegated powers reserved to, 2.8.196, 3.6.48  
 voluntary support of government by, 1.16
- people, common  
 alienation of Congress from, 5.14.31  
 America's independence won by, 5.2.4  
 degradation of, 5.1.67  
 desire of, to rise above their station, 3.16.5  
 disarming of, 3.16.12  
 exclusion of, from government, 3.3.41  
 no representation for, 3.11.35  
 opposition to their participation in government, 3.3.3  
 political judgment of, 4.16.1  
 "perfect union," 5.14.44  
 and abolition of inferior governments, 2.9.151
- perjury, 4.4.40
- perquisites, 3.16.1
- Persians, 3.16.16, 5.1.47, 5.1.97
- persuasion, 1.16, 2.8.93
- Peru, 5.1.47
- Peter the Great, 2.9.87
- Petersham, Massachusetts, 6.14.31–32
- petition, right of, 2.7.55, 3.9.32, 4.14.3, 5.4.7
- Petition of Right (England), 2.7.112, 3.3.23, 5.1.8, 5.5.11, 6.9.4

- petitions, Federalist, 3.11.7
- Philadelphia, 3.9.4, 3.9.51, 2.7.127
  - advantage of as seat of government, 4.6.65
  - delegates of, at Federal Convention, 3.2.2
  - Federalists in, 2.7.184, 3.11.11
  - impartiality of its printers, 3.9.5, 3.9.23, 3.9.65
  - inferiority of, to Boston, 4.6n19
  - and Pennsylvania Assembly, 3.11.4
  - removal of Congress from, 2.8.222
  - representation of, 2.8.99
  - situation of, contrasted with Massachusetts, 4.3.3
- Philadelphia Convention. *See* Constitutional Convention, federal
- Philadelphensis (pseud.), 3.9; 2.7.177
- Philanthrop (pseud.), 4.27.3–4
- Philanthropos (pseud.), 2.5n5
- Phileleutheros (pseud.), 4.27
- Philip of Macedon, 2.6.48, 4.12.1, 4.12.5
- Philips, Josiah, 5.16.5, 5.16n13
- Philo of Alexandria, 4.17 intro. n1
- philosophy, 4.24n1
- Phocion letters, 6.6.46, 6.6.n20
- Pickering, Timothy, 2.8 intro., 2.8n6
- Pierce, William, 2.4 intro.
- Pinckney, Charles, 1.42–43, 5.10n5
  - criticisms of new Constitution by, 3.8.9, 3.8n9
  - debate in South Carolina legislature, 5.12n3
  - on federal judiciary, 1.93n12
  - on primacy of Union, 1.82n40
  - on slave trade and slavery, 5.12.1, 5.12n6
  - on state sovereignty, 5.12n7
  - speech of, at Constitutional Convention, 4.6n6
- Pindar, 5.1.21
- piracy, and jurisdiction of federal courts, 2.8.185, 2.9.86, 4.6.42, 4.9.22
- Pisistratus, 5.1.23
  - and standing armies, 3.6.21, 4.3.29
- Pitt, William (Earl of Chatham), 6.8.18
- placemen, 4.13.21, 4.19.1
- Plain Dealer (pseud.), 2.5 intro., 2.5n6
- Plain Truth (pseud.), 3.8 intro., 3.8n1, 3.8nn3–5, 3.8n7
- plantations, unincorporated, 4.13.14
- Plater, George, 5.4.1
- Plato, 5.1.21, 5.3.10
- Plebeian, 6.11; 5.1n4
- plebeians, 3.9.36, 3.16.4, 5.12.13
- Pliny the Elder, 5.1.103
- plurality, elections decided by, 2.8.152–54, 2.8.177
- Plutarch, 5.1.21
- Poland
  - condition of people in, 3.14.9
  - constitution of, 3.6.25
  - elective monarchy in, 3.3.31
  - partition of, 5.1.99
  - provincial assemblies in, 3.6.37
  - turbulent government of, 5.10.2
- police, internal, 2.8.7, 2.8.213, 4.6.18, 4.6.54
  - Countryman on, 6.6.34
  - and federal bankruptcy law, 2.8.221
  - and judicial power, 2.9.130
  - old Congress not concerned with, 5.14.34
  - state responsibility for, 2.8.22, 2.8.205, 2.9.64
- policy, motives of, 5.14.24–25
- political economy, 5.1.82
- political process, disillusionment with, 5.1.71
- politics
  - charm of, 4.3.12
  - and common people, 3.16.8
  - deceptions of, 6.14.119
  - in southern states, vol. 5, pt. 2, intro.
- politics, science of, 3.12.6
  - complication of, by human passions, 3.3.20
  - and European experience, 2.6.13
  - no novelties in, 5.1.21
- poll tax, 3.13.5
  - despotic governments and, 2.6.40, 2.6.42, 3.11.46
- Maryland Bill of Rights on, 5.3.8
- [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.59
- [Pennsylvania] Farmer on, 3.14.11



## Index

- poll tax (*continued*)
  - power of Congress to impose, 2.9.59, 2.9.63
  - proposal of, by Robert Morris, 6.1.45
  - proposed amendment prohibiting, 5.4.7
  - Publius on, 2.6n29
  - Son of Liberty on, 6.2.2
  - substitution of, for imposts, 2.7.52, 3.16.17
- Polybius, 5.1.21, 6.14.121
- Pompey, 5.1.107
- pontifex maximus, 4.12.6
- Pope, Alexander, 2.8.1, 2.8n3, 5.1.36, 6.6.39
- Poplicola (pseud.), 4.11; 3.3n1, 3.3n2
- popular consent
  - basis of laws, 2.9.14
  - for ratification of Constitution, 2.4.111–14
- Popular Discontents* (Sir William Temple), 5.1n20
- popular government
  - guarantee of, by new Constitution, 2.2n1
  - Machiavelli on, 5.1.81
  - and small territories, 5.17.1
- popular interests, divorce of, from popular affections, 3.6.21
- population
  - basis for state financial contributions, 2.5.12
  - changes in, 2.9.92, 4.14.1
  - of large and small states, 2.4.36
- population, ratio of, to representatives. *See* representatives
- port duties, 2.4.73
- ports
  - equal treatment for all, 4.6.42
  - federal regulation of, 2.4.73–74
  - free access to, 5.12.2
- posse comitatus, 2.8.39, 2.9.50, 4.3.21
- posterity
  - Cato [South Carolina]’s concern for, 5.10.3
  - decisions of Framers binding upon, 4.5.13
  - effect of proposed Constitution on, 3.2.2
  - obligation to, 3.8.11
  - Patrick Henry’s appeal to, 5.16.6
  - political inheritance of, 2.6.3
  - protection for interests of, 2.6.34
- postmaster general, 2.7.144
  - interference of, with liberties of states, 2.7.183
  - interference of, with press, 2.7.144
- post office, 2.8.169
  - control of, by dominant party, 3.16.17
  - and delivery of newspapers, 2.7n68
  - efforts of, to subvert Anti-Federalist newspapers, 2.7.165
  - examination of mail by, 3.16.7
  - federal control of, 2.8.10, 2.8.35, 5.3.10
  - interference of, with newspaper circulation, 2.7 intro., 2.7.144, 2.7.163
  - “new arrangement,” 2.7.182, 2.7n68
  - printers’ dependence upon, 2.7.163
  - as source of federal revenue, 3.3.35
- postroads, 3.14.18
- poverty
  - Constitution’s deliverance of Framers from, 3.16.1
  - effect of, on public bodies, 4.5.20
  - and southern lower classes, 4.6.48
  - and standing armies, 5.1.45
- Powel, Joseph, 3.11.56
- power
  - abuse of, 2.2n7, 2.9.128, 3.3.14, 5.1.96
  - corrupting influence of, 4.3.12
  - danger of too much or too little, 2.8.209
  - derivation of, from people, 2.6.8, 5.14.28
  - division of, among rulers, 3.12.13
  - division of, between state and federal governments, 2.9.80, 6.13n3
  - division of, in confederated republic, 2.8.208
  - human appetite for, 5.14.4, 6.8n2
  - limitation of, 2.9.23–25, 5.14.18
  - perpetuation of, in one man or family, 2.8.178

## Index

### power (*continued*)

- rejection of, as bond of union, 1.24–25
- relation of, to representation, 2.8.20–21, 2.8.36
- relation of, to wealth, 5.1.26
- reluctance of people to part with, 3.3.3
- surrender of, 3.3.10, 5.14.2
- temptations of, 2.4 intro. n9, 2.7.108, 3.3.10
- tendency of, to increase, 2.9.9
- usurpations of, 2.9.115, 5.13.13
- power, arbitrary, 3.3.51. *See also* government, arbitrary
- power, balance of, 3.8n3
- power, excessive, 3.3.51, 4.6.30
- power, governmental
  - difficulty of rescinding, 4.3.2, 6.1.18
  - reluctance of rulers to abridge, 2.9.3
- power, hereditary, 2.8.178, 2.9.190
- power, legislative, 2.9.159, 4.8.1
- power, supreme, indivisibility of, 3.8.3, 5.14.4
- powers, congressional, 2.2.11, 4.18.1
- powers, constitutional, 5.21.17
- powers, delegated, 2.5.20
  - adequacy of for effective government, 2.8.178
  - ambiguity of, 4.2.2
  - amendment restricting Congress to, 5.4.6
  - Consider Arms et al. on, 4.26.6
  - Constitutional Convention and, 2.7.67
  - Countryman on, 6.7.8
  - Federalist and Anti-Federalist positions on, 1.28–32
  - James Wilson on, 6.1.4
  - precise definition of, 2.8.197, 3.3.7
  - and rights to recall officials, 2.8.147.
  - See also* rights, reserved
- powers, emergency, 5.1.81
- powers, enumerated, 1.65
  - bill of rights and, 2.8.196
  - Congress not confined to, 3.3.12
- powers, federal
  - Federal Farmer on, 2.8.35–43

- Farmer and Planter on, 5.2.3
- necessity of increasing, 4.13.4
- true purpose of, 3.4.4
- powers, implied, 2.9.141, 3.3.7, 6.13.25
  - argument against, 3.3.8
  - argument that Congress may exercise, 3.3.9–13
  - Cincinnatus on, 6.1.12
  - Countryman on, 6.7.8, 6.7.13
  - danger of, 1.66
  - John DeWitt on, 4.3.8
  - [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.62
  - and violation of basic rights, 2.9.30
- powers, presidential, 3.9.92, 5.14.39
- powers, reservation of those not delegated
  - Brutus on, 2.9.26
  - Cincinnatus on, 6.1.12
  - Federal Farmer on, 2.8.50
  - George Clinton on, 6.13.38
  - Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.5
  - John DeWitt on, 4.3.7
  - Old Whig on, 3.3.7–8, 3.3.22
- powers, separation of. *See* separation of powers
- powers, unlimited
  - Philadelphiensis on, 3.9.66
  - Publius on, 2.8 intro.
- Praetorian Guard, 5.1.100
- preamble to Federal Constitution, 1.12, 2.9.141, 2.9.150–51
  - and consolidation, 3.11.30
  - dishonesty of, 6.9.2
  - Freeman on, 3.11n15
  - George Clinton on, 6.13.25
  - indefiniteness of, 2.9.57
  - Republican Federalist on, 4.13.21
- precedent, 2.9.195, 5.18.14
- prejudice, 3.12.7
- prerogative, 2.9.190
  - definition of, 5.16.24
  - incompatibility of with republican government, 5.14.37
- presidency, 6.10.7
  - Cato [South Carolina] on, 5.10.2
  - Cornelius on, 4.10.12
  - Denatus on, 5.18.13
  - effective check on populace, 3.4.4
  - for life, 2.8.181, 4.14.3
  - George Mason on, 2.2.6–9
  - importance of free access to,

presidency (*continued*)

5.10.2  
 James Monroe on, 5.21.25  
 military character of, 3.9.11, 4.4.39  
 monarchical powers of, 2.4.27, 3.3.31  
 Old Whig on, 3.3.31  
 Philadelphiensis on, 3.9.96–98  
 Republicus on, 5.13.13  
 Richard Henry Lee on, 5.6.2  
 presidency, septennial, 2.8.178  
 president  
   alliance of, with dominant senators, 3.11.45  
   appointment of officials by, 2.8.45, 2.8.170, 4.23.3(6)  
   army's loyalty to, 5.9.11  
   combination of powers held by, 5.14.39  
   as commander-in-chief, 2.4.85, 2.6.31  
   comparison of, with a king: Cato on, 2.6.31; Cato [South Carolina] on, 5.10.2, 5.10.4; Cornelius on, 4.10.21; Countryman on, 6.6.28; *Federalist* no. 69 on, 2.6n20; Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.40; Luther Martin on, 2.4.54; Officer of the Late Continental Army on, 3.8.3; Philadelphiensis on, 3.9.92; Tamony on, 5.11.6  
   control of, over Congress, 2.7.20, 2.8.170  
   Countryman on, 6.7.1  
   death or removal of, 2.8.181, 3.13.3  
   election of, 2.4.83, 2.6.30, 2.8.177, 3.9.63, 4.6.75, 4.13.13, 4.28.4  
   exclusion of his relatives from office, 5.18.13  
   impeachment of, 2.4.87–88  
   independence of the people, 5.13.13  
   influence of, on House of Representatives, 2.8.100, 3.4.2  
   influence of Congress on, 3.16.15  
   and large states, 2.4.17  
   manipulation of apportionment by, 4.14.2  
   militia officers commissioned by,

4.13.29  
 necessity of advice for, 2.8.172  
 nomination of officials by, 2.4.48, 2.4.86  
 possible violation of law by, 5.16.7  
 power of, to adjourn Congress, 5.10.2, 5.12.4  
 power of, to call Congress into session, 2.6.45, 5.12.4  
 power of, to make peace, 4.5.2  
 proposal to limit his wartime command, 5.9.10  
 reception of ambassadors by, 2.6.31  
 salary of, 4.10.12, 4.12.5, 5.9.9  
 and raising of troops, 2.9.114  
 reelection of, 2.4.81, 2.5.41, 2.6n17, 2.8.178–80, 5.3.17, 5.10.2  
 relation of, to law, 5.14.38  
 religious beliefs of, 4.6.78  
 right of, to interfere in election of representatives, 5.12.2  
 role of, in legislation, 2.5.40, 3.11.34, 5.14.35, 6.9.13  
 and Senate: Cato on, 2.6.26, 2.6.45; Centinel on, 2.7.49; Federal Farmer on, 2.8.29, 2.8.171; Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.40; John DeWitt on, 4.3.13; Luther Martin on, 2.4.42; Officer of the Late Continental Army on, 3.8.3; William Symmes on, 4.5.2  
 subjection of, to reprisals after leaving office, 5.1.71  
 suspensive power of, 5.13.14  
 term of office of, 2.4.81, 2.6.25, 5.2.3, 4.23.3(1)  
 treaty-making power of, 2.8.48  
 use of title to appease republican prejudice, 3.4.4  
 presidential council, 2.6.26, 3.11.3  
   amendment providing for, 5.4.7  
   George Mason on, 2.2.6  
   Pennsylvania Convention Minority on, 3.11.45  
   proposal for, 2.7.51  
   Richard Henry Lee on, 5.6.5.  
   *See also* executive council  
 presidential favorites, danger to liberty from, 2.2.6, 2.6.26

## Index

- press
  - defenselessness of, under proposed Constitution, 2.7.25, 2.7.37, 3.6.36, 3.9.21, 5.3.19
  - Federalist attempts to shackle, 2.7 intro., 3.9.2, 4.3.25
- press, freedom of, 2.2.13, 2.7.122, 3.8.3, 5.6.5, 6.10.8
  - amendment to protect, 5.4.6, 5.9.15
  - Anti-Federalist concern for, 1.8n5
  - and bill of rights, 4.17.3
  - Candidus on, 4.9.11
  - Cincinnatus on, 6.1.5–12
  - Columbian Patriot on, 4.28.4
  - communication between states essential for, 2.7.183
  - Federal Farmer on, 2.8.86, 2.8.196, 2.8.203
  - Federalist suspicions of, 3.4.5
  - and federal judicial power, 3.5.3
  - in Great Britain, 2.8.104, 3.8n3
  - Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.10
  - John DeWitt on, 4.3.10
  - John Humble on, 3.7.2
  - likelihood of its violation, 2.8.56, 5.16.37
  - necessity of safeguarding, 2.7.55, 3.2.7
  - Old Whig on, 3.3.3, 3.3.15
  - One of the Common People on, 4.8.1
  - One of the Middle Interest on, 4.8n4
  - Patrick Henry on peril to, 5.16.2
  - in Pennsylvania Constitution, 2.7.1
  - Pennsylvania Convention Minority on, 3.11.13
  - Philadelphiensis on, 3.9.2, 3.9.16, 3.9.49–55
  - place of, in Anti-Federalist writings, 1.97n5
  - Plebeian on, 6.11.32
  - and prior restraint, 4.17n3
  - and right of anonymity, 5.1.3
  - security of, in America, 3.8n3
  - Son of Liberty on, 6.2.2
  - source of trouble to government, 3.16.12
- Price, Richard, 2.4.44, 3.10.4, 5.11.4, 5.13.14
- price levels, 2.6.40, 4.6.10
- pride, 4.6.50, 4.11.2
- printers
  - aid of, to Anti-Federalist cause, 2.7.160
  - dependence of, on post office, 2.7.163
  - and federal Constitution, 2.7.163
  - intimidation of, 4.7.1
  - possible government control over, 3.3.15
  - pressure on, to reveal names of Anti-Federalist authors, 3.9.3
  - prosecution of, for libel, 4.8.1
  - taxation of, 2.8.56, 2.8.203
- printers, Bostonian, and Federalists, 3.9.4
- prior restraint, 4.17n3
- privacy
  - protection of, 5.4.6
  - violation of, by excise officers, 5.2.2
- privateering, 4.18.1, 5.21.5
- privilege clause, 3.4.3
- privileges and immunities clause, 6.9.30
- privy council, proposal for, 3.9.97.  
*See also* presidential council
- privy council, British
  - Brutus [Virginia] on, 5.15.1
  - Cincinnatus on, 6.1.36
  - exclusion of foreigners from, 4.13.26
  - Senate compared to, 4.5.2
- probate, judges of, 4.21.1
- produce, inspection of, 3.13.3
- products, American, preference given to, 4.3.5, 4.6.36
- professional men, 2.8.15, 2.8.98
- progress, human, [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.21
- promissory notes, 4.5.2
- property
  - acquisition of, by Framers, 4.3.15
  - basis of power, 3.6n10
  - basis of representation, 4.13.23, 6.9.20
  - basis of taxation, 4.3.21, 4.6.40
  - confiscation of, 3.9.35, 3.9.67, 5.2.4
  - danger of innovations respecting, 4.13.16
  - equal division of, 2.7.9, 5.1.58

## Index

- property (*continued*)
  - fears for security of, 5.1.56
  - federal Constitution as protector of, 4.13.15, 5.5.9
  - government as protector of, 5.13.2
  - insecurity of, 3.6.27; in England, 5.1.75; under state governments, 2.9.180
  - jury system as protector of, 5.1.67
  - laws regulating tenure of, 2.8.188
  - political society as preserver of, 2.6.11
  - power of government over, 2.9.26, 3.11.20
  - protection for, 2.8.86, 6.14.9
  - security of, in Virginia, 5.16.5
  - seizure of, for state debts, 2.9.166
  - Senate as protector of, 2.8.146
  - source of contention, 2.8.98
  - taxation of, 2.9.59, 3.9.21
  - unequal division of, 4.6.48, 5.1.93
- property, private, searches of, 2.4.55
- property, real loss of, during Revolution, 4.26.10
- property assessment, 2.4.55
- property cases
  - federal jurisdiction in, 4.6.17
  - involving citizens of different states, 4.6.19
  - jury trial in, 2.9.29
- property owners, in militia, 2.8.217
- property qualification, 6.9.20
  - for Congress, 4.13.28
  - control of membership in legislature by, 4.13.29
  - for delegates to Maryland convention, vol. 5 intro.
- Proposal for Reviving Christian Conviction*, 5.8
- proprietary government (Pennsylvania), vol. 3 intro., 6.6.17
- prorogation, 2.4.51
- prosperity
  - promotion of, 2.5.4
  - restoration of, 5.19.1
- Protestantism
  - establishment of, in Massachusetts, 4.24.4
  - qualification for public office, 4.23.3(9)
- Protestants, limitation of toleration
  - to, 1.22
- prothonotary, 3.1.4
- Prussia, 5.1.99, 5.16.1, 6.1.25
- pseudonymity, advantages of, in political controversy, 3.9.54
- pseudonymous writings
  - Aristides on, 5.1n2
  - frequency of, in eighteenth century, 2.8 intro. n6
  - [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.2–3
  - Philadelphiensis on, 3.9.5
  - suggested banning of, 3.9.2
- public defaulters
  - influence of, 2.7.168
  - protection of, by ex post facto clause, 3.16.18–19
- public good
  - as motive for creation of government, 3.3.20
  - pretended zeal for, 2.9.47
  - sacrifice of, in large republics, 2.9.11
- public interest, indivisibility of, 5.13.7
- public securities, 4.7.1, 4.15.4, 4.17.8
- Publius, 1.12, 2.6n17, 2.7.142, 2.9n16, 3.3n3
  - alleged contradictions of, 2.9n87
  - Brutus on, 2.9.79–80
  - champion of Federalist cause, 2.9.111–12
  - on concurrent taxing power, 2.9n47
  - on consolidation, 2.8n9
  - on Constitution as fundamental law, 2.9n101
  - on contradictions of Anti-Federalism, 1.71
  - Countryman on, 6.7.12
  - Countryman from Dutchess County on, 6.6.50
  - defense of national powers by, 4.5 intro.
  - on delegation of power, 1.29
  - on desperate state of country, 1.25
  - on disputes between branches of government, 1.74–75
  - on distinction between American governments and ancient ones, 1.43
  - on executive power, 2.6n26

## Index

### Publius (*continued*)

- on faction, 3.14n2
- Federal Farmer on, 2.8.170
- on federal government's independence of states, 2.9n87
- on genius of American people, 1.72–73
- on human nature, 4.3n12
- and Impartial Examiner, 5.14n7
- on importance of money in government, 2.9n45
- on imports, 2.9n64
- on imposts, 2.7n30
- on increased representation, 3.11n17
- on judicial power to void laws, 2.9n110
- on judiciary, 1.93n14
- on large republics, 3.8n4, 5.21n2
- on majority tyranny, 1.39
- on military power of British monarch, 5.11n2
- on national government, 1.10, 2.9n46
- on national resources, 4.5n5
- on offensive war, 2.9n59
- on people's right to alter their government, 3.11n4
- on poll tax, 2.6n29
- on popular resistance, 1.69
- on powers of confederate government, 2.9n56
- on presidency, 3.3n29, 3.3n30
- on remote states, 2.8n14
- reply to, by Observer, 6.4
- on representation by class, 2.8n60
- on separation of powers, 2.9n112
- on standing armies, 2.9.111–12, 2.9.127–29, 4.3n21; and insurrections, 2.9n73; and state constitutions, 2.9n76
- on system of influence, 2.8n26
- on treaties, 5.20.3.
- See also* Hamilton, Alexander
- Pufendorf, Samuel von, 6.1.40
- Pulteney (Pultney), William, earl of Bath, 2.9.99–101
- punishment
  - control of passions by, 4.24.2
  - fear of, 5.8.2
  - incentive to action, 5.21.24, 5.21n13
- punishment, corporal, 3.11.52

- punishments, cruel and unusual
  - Brutus on, 2.9.28
  - Centinel on, 2.7.55
  - George Mason on, 2.2.12
  - Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.10
  - Patrick Henry on, 5.16.18, 5.16.36–37
  - Pennsylvania Convention Minority on, 3.11.13
  - Philadelphiensis on, 3.9.67
- purse, power of
  - Centinel on, 2.7.96
  - Consider Arms et al. on, 4.26.7
  - John DeWitt on, 4.3.15
  - Pennsylvania Convention Minority on, 3.11.20
  - William Symmes on, 4.5.19
- purse and sword, wisdom of separating, 2.8.124, 2.8.208
- pursuance, meaning of, 6.6.27
- pursuance clause
  - Brutus on, 2.9.5, 2.9.31
  - Centinel on, 2.7.97, 2.7n52
  - Cincinnatus on, 6.1.16
  - Citizen on, 6.6.13
  - Countryman on, 6.6.25–29
  - Federal Farmer on, 2.8.46
  - Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.4
  - [New Hampshire] Farmer on, 4.17.2
  - Old Whig on, 3.3.13
  - Pennsylvania Convention Minority on, 3.11.22
  - Sydney on, 6.9.12–13, 6.9.21
  - Vox Populi on, 4.4.34
- Pym, John, 4.28.4, 5.1.73
- Quakers, 2.7.6, 6.7.6
- quartering of troops
  - amendment governing, 5.4.6
  - consent for, 2.8.86
  - constitutional provision against, 2.8.202
  - state bills of rights on, 5.1.44, 5.3.8, 5.3.17
- Quebec, Battle of (1775), 4.3n12
- Quincy, Josiah, 6.14.7
- quo minus writ, 2.9.143
- quotas, tax, 3.3.37, 3.9.85
- race, and slavery, 4.26.8
- Ramillies, Battle of, 5.16.11
- Randolph, Edmund, 2.5; 1.5, 1.35.

## Index

Randolph, Edmund (*continued*)  
 2.1 intro., 5.16n22  
 amendment plan of, 2.5.35  
 on bills of rights, 1.68  
 career of, 2.5 intro.  
 and Federalist viewpoint, 2.5 intro.  
 on Josiah Philips case, 5.6n13  
 letter of Richard Henry Lee to, 5.6  
 on need for secure and stable government, 5.16n11  
 opposition of, to unitary executive, 1.93n8  
 on plural executive, 4.10n5  
 and ratification, 2.5.43  
 refusal of, to sign Constitution, 2.5 intro., 2.5.31, 2.5.36, 3.2.7, 4.12.1  
 and Section Nine, 5.16n55  
 on specific restrictions in Constitution, 2.9n22  
 on Virginia, 5.16.4  
 on Virginia Declaration of Rights, 2.8n118  
 on Virginia resolutions, 1.38, 2.4.12  
 ratification, 2.4.112, 2.5.36, 3.3.2  
 Albany Committee on, 6.10.10–14  
 of Articles of Confederation, 2.5.20  
 Edmund Randolph and, 2.5.43  
 Federalist impatience for, 3.9.74  
 importance of due consideration before, 3.1.4–5  
 influence of local issues on, 6.11.19  
 by majority of states, 4.28.4  
 in Maryland, 5.5.3  
 Mercy Warren on, 6.14.45, 6.14.50–51  
 minority consent for, 4.4.14, 4.4.20  
 mode of, inconsistent with republican principles, 4.4.20  
 nine states sufficient for, 4.2.11  
 people of Massachusetts not bound by, 4.13.21  
 postponement of, 4.12.1  
 ratification debate  
 attempt to limit scope of, 5.11.3  
 contribution of, to nations, 1.72  
 duty of all to participate in, 4.3.2

Federalist desire to shorten, 6.1.39  
 tenor of, 4.3.26  
 ratification procedure, 1.12–13, 1.82n39, 4.13.13  
 Ravenel, Mrs. St. Julien, 5.12 intro. n3  
 raw materials, export of, 2.4.79, 3.3.32  
 Raynal, Guillaume Thomas François, 5.11.7  
 Read, George, 2.4n11  
 real estate, free transfer of, 3.6n10  
 reason  
 [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.68  
 natural law based on, 5.13.2  
 Newport Man's definition of, 4.25.3  
 support of liberty by, 2.7.70  
 rebellion  
 bill of rights and, 4.6.71  
 defense of state governments by, 2.9.69  
 recourse against federal abuse of power, 2.9.128, 4.26.6  
 resistance to tyranny construed as, 2.4.62  
 and suspension of habeas corpus benefits, 2.4.72, 2.9.30  
*See also* insurrection  
 recall  
 of members of Congress, 2.8.147, 4.6.45  
 not provided for, in new Constitution, 2.8.133  
 of representatives under Confederation, 4.4.38  
 of senators by state legislatures, 2.9.201, 6.12.25, 6.12.27, 6.12.29, 6.12n30, 6.13.11  
 Watchman on, 4.22.4  
 reelection  
 Friend to the Rights of the People on, 4.23.3(1)  
 James Monroe on, 5.21.24  
 legislators barred from, 2.4.48  
 presidential, 2.4.81, 2.5.41, 5.10.2; arguments against, 2.8.178–80; argument for, 2.6n17  
 provision for, by Congress, 4.18.1  
 of senators and representatives, 4.3.9

## Index

- reform
  - criteria determining extent of, 5.14.41–43
  - desirability of, 2.8.1
  - promise of, by Congress, 4.26.15
  - timing of, 1.74–75
- Reformation, 4.24.3
- regulation, internal. *See* police, internal
- religion
  - Anti-Federalists on importance of, 1.22–23
  - Aristocrotis on, 3.16.14–15
  - attractions of, in troubled times, 5.1.104
  - civil society and, 4.16.1
  - danger of innovations respecting, 4.13.16
  - education of people in, 5.18.9, 5.18.10
  - indifference toward, 5.8.4
  - in New England, 4.6.48
  - in New York, 6.9.29
  - perversion of, 5.16.24
  - political uses of, 4.24n1
  - public provision for, 4.24.1–6
  - in republics and monarchies, 6.14.135–40
  - silence of federal Constitution on, 3.9.13
  - slavery contrary to, 2.9.39
  - religion, establishment of, 3.3.29, 4.24.3, 5.8.5
  - Countryman on, 6.7.13
  - in Europe, 4.24.3
  - Samuel on, 4.14.7
  - religion, natural, 3.16.15
  - religious conflicts, 2.7.109, 4.25.3
  - religious freedom, 5.6.5, 6.10.6
  - amendment to protect, 5.4.7
  - civil liberty and, 5.1.107
  - federal government's interference with, 3.9.11
  - necessity for protection of, 2.7.55, 2.8.53, 2.8.86
  - Watchman on, 4.22.4
  - religious instruction, beneficial effect of, on children, 5.8.5
  - religious persecution, 2.7.109, 3.3.27
  - religious principles, dependence of republican government on, 5.8.2
  - religious tests, 1.64, 3.16.14
  - Cincinnatus on, 6.1.19
  - for Congress, 4.14.3
  - Friend to the Rights of the People on, 4.23.3(9)
  - Luther Martin on, 2.4.108
  - in Massachusetts, 4.24.4
  - religious uniformity, and general welfare clause, 3.13.5
  - reparation, for victims of Shays' rebellion, 4.6.8
  - representation
    - Anti-Federalist and Federalist views on, 1.43–45
    - apportionment of, 2.4.45
    - division of, in federated republics, 2.8.208
    - equality of, 2.4 intro., 5.13.3
    - filtering effect of, 1.41
    - increase of, with population growth, 2.4.36
    - in large republics, 2.9.14
    - limitation of, for economic reasons, 6.12.13, 6.12.24
    - in lower house, 5.5.7
    - modernity of, 1.91n31
    - principles of, 1.17, 3.11.33
    - proportion of, to numbers, 2.4.14, 4.13.23
    - Republican Federalist on, 4.13.22–23
    - Republicus on, 5.13.3
    - Robert Livingston on, 6.12n22
    - taxation as basis for, 2.4.28, 2.4.30
  - representation, adequate, 3.16n6
  - Brutus on, 2.9.45
  - Federal Farmer on, 2.8.97
  - Republican Federalist on, 4.13.25
  - Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.28–29
  - representation, compromise on. *See* Great Compromise
  - representation, federal
    - arguments for more numerous, 2.8.97–118, 2.8.133–37
    - comparison of, with that under British rule, 5.12.2
    - inadequacy of: Agrippa on, 4.6.1, 4.6.4; Candidus on, 4.9.11; Elbridge Gerry on, 2.1.2; George Clinton on, 6.13.31; Officer of the Late Continental Army on, 3.8.3; Pennsylvania Convention



## Index

- representation, federal (*cont.*)
  - Minority on, 3.11.35; Samuel Chase on, 5.3.20
  - increase of, 2.8.126, 2.8.158, 3.11n17, 5.6.5
  - inequality of, 2.9.38
  - Melancton Smith on, 6.12.8–20
  - reduction of, 3.13.5, 4.13.25, 5.1.82, 6.12n14
- representation, numerous, 1.17–18, 2.9.42–48, 4.2.4, 6.12n13
- representation, partial, 4.4.7
- representation, popular, 2.98.106
- representation, proportional, of states
  - debate over, 2.4.28–35
  - in general assembly, 2.9.37
  - proposed for both houses of Congress, 2.4.16
  - recommended for Senate, 2.6.35
- representation, virtual, 1.91n41, 4.13.23, 5.16.29, 6.8.1–2
- representation of states
  - Federal Republican on, 3.6.11–14
  - in Virginia plan, 2.4.17
- representative bodies, basis of, 2.4.29
- representative bodies, small, 2.8.105
- representative branch
  - popular confidence in, 2.8.95
  - safeguards for its democratic character, 2.8.101
- representative government
  - aristocratic nature of, 5.1.29
  - changeability of, 5.1.71
  - degeneration of, 5.1.22
  - devotion of, to minority interests, 5.1.113
  - failure of, in Europe, 5.5.11
  - feudal system weakened by, 5.1.107
  - inability of, to act in general interest, 5.5.6
  - James Monroe on, 5.21.14
  - lifetime executive needed for, 5.1.74
- representative principle
  - Anti-Federalist acceptance of, 1.17–18
  - limitation of, 1.84n21, 6.13.35
- representatives
  - familiarity of, with their constituents, 1.17; Brutus on, 2.9.14; Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.28–29; Melancton Smith on, 6.12.15; Samuel Chase on, 5.3.20
  - immediate contact of, with people, 3.12.12
  - influence of, in small legislature, 5.14.30
  - and jurors, 2.8.55
  - reflection of population by, 2.9.42
  - residence of, among their constituents, 2.8.25
- representatives, federal
  - ability of, to defy their constituents, 4.6.4
  - ability of, to squander public money, 5.16.8
  - accountability of, to people: Corneliu on, 4.10.7; Federal Republican on, 3.6.26; Georgian on, 5.9.6; Luther Martin on, 2.4.42
  - age requirement for, 4.13.26
  - appointment of, by states, 4.4.4, 4.13.23
  - apportionment of, 4.2n2; Cato on, 2.6.39; Farmer and Planter on, 5.2.3; Samuel on, 4.14.1–2
  - authority of, 4.3.8
  - common lot of, with their constituents, 2.8.119
  - compromises made by, 5.5.5
  - conduct of, unknown to electors, 4.6.59
  - control of, over their own wages, 4.14.1
  - corruption of, 4.25.3
  - economic and social status of, 6.7.4
  - election of: Aristocrotis on, 3.6.16; Federal Farmer on, 2.8.160; frequency of, 2.6.35, 2.6.37, 6.6.34; Patrick Henry on, 5.16.8; Rawlins Lowndes on, 5.12.2; Samuel Chase on, 5.3.17
  - eligibility of, for other government posts, 2.4.46–48, 4.13.5
  - estrangement of, from their constituents, 3.4.3, 4.3.14
  - federal payment of, 5.12.2
  - immunity of, from arrest, 3.4.3
  - influence of Senate on, 2.8.170

- representatives, federal (*cont.*)
  - knowledge required of, 5.16.8
  - number of; Cato on, 2.6.35, 2.6.38; Centinel on, 2.7.23; Cincinnatus on, 6.1.29; Countryman on, 6.7.4; Federal Farmer on, 2.8.15, 2.8.116; Gentleman in a Neighbouring State on, 4.2.3; Philadelphiensis on, 3.9.95; Plebeian on, 6.11.15; Republican Federalist on, 4.13.25; Samuel on, 4.14.2; Samuel Chase on, 5.3.20
  - payment of, by states, 4.10.8–9
  - popular confidence in, 1.72
  - qualifications of, 2.8.150
  - ratio of, to population: Agrippa on, 4.6.4; Cincinnatus on, 6.1.29; Columbian Patriot on, 4.28.4; Federal Farmer on, 2.8.25, 2.8.99, 2.8.105, 2.8.114, 2.8.116, 2.8.158; Republican Federalist on, 4.13.25; George Mason on, 5.17.1; Georgian on, 5.9.4; in Great Britain, 4.13.25; Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.29; insufficiency of, 3.6.11; Melancton Smith on, 6.12.8–10, 6.12.12; Patrick Henry on, 5.16.2; Pennsylvania Convention Minority on, 3.11.34–35, 3.11.37; Republicus on, 5.13.3; Samuel Chase on, 5.3.20
  - recall of, 2.8.147, 2.9.129, 2.9.196
  - reelection of, 4.13.5
  - rules governing, 2.4.16
  - salaries of, 2.8.142, 4.23.3(3)
  - Samuel Chase on, 5.3.17
  - Sidney on, 6.8.32
  - term of office of: Agrippa on, 4.6.60; Centinel on, 2.7.22, 2.7.74; Congress empowered to change, 3.16.4; Friend to the Rights of the People on, 4.23.3(1)
- See also* legislators, federal
- representatives, Pennsylvania
  - choice of, as delegates to Constitutional Convention, 3.1.5
- representatives, state
  - choice of, 2.8.160
  - excessive numbers of, 2.8.116
  - reprieves. *See* pardoning power
  - republic, consolidated, 2.6.12. *See also* consolidated government
  - Republican Federalist (pseud.), 4.13; 4.12 intro. n1, 4.22 intro.
  - republican form of government
    - compatibility of, with despotism, 5.14.4
    - guarantee of, to Poland, 5.1.99
    - guarantee of, to states: Albany Committee on, 6.10.10; Countryman on, 6.7.10; Federal Republican on, 3.6.25; George Clinton on, 6.13.26; Luther Martin on, 2.4.16; Sydney on, 6.9.14–15, 6.9.23; William Symmes on, 4.5.2
  - republican government
    - arguments against, 4.6.49–50
    - dissolution of, 3.3.39
    - form of, substituted for reality, 2.7.68
    - George Clinton on, 6.13.2
    - and large territories, 2.4.103
    - Mercy Warren on dangers to, 6.14.42
    - opponents of, 4.3.10, 4.13.19
    - Patrick Henry on, 5.16.19
    - and popular virtue, 2.7.9, 4.13.21
    - Sidney on, 6.8.16–18
    - stability and energy of, 4.6.49
    - transformation of, into aristocracy, 4.19.4
  - republicanism
    - enthusiasm for, 4.26.7
    - slavery and, 2.4.70
  - republicanism, classical, 2.1 intro. n2, 4.6.49–50
  - republicanism, Revolutionary, 1.83n7
  - republican leaders, unwillingness of, to risk unpopularity, 5.8.2
  - republican principles
    - Federalist contempt for, 6.12.20
    - and government of Federal City, 2.8.22
  - republicans (name)
    - application of, to Anti-Federalists, 2.8.72
    - deceitful use of, 6.7.4
    - Pennsylvania Federalists, vol. 3 intro.
  - republicans, old, 5.1.58

- republics
  - abuses in, 5.19.9
  - limitation of warmaking power in, 5.16.23
- republics, ancient
  - importance of religion in, 6.14.135
  - popular sovereignty in, 3.14.2
- republics, democratic
  - Federalist aversion to, 2.8.115
  - popular sovereignty in, 2.6.8
- republics, European, 5.19.1
- republics, federal, 2.9.4, 3.3.20, 3.11.16
  - Agrippa on, 4.6.49
  - Columbian Patriot on, 4.28.4
  - consolidated government distinguished from, 2.8.132, 2.8.205
  - definition of, 3.14.6
  - Federal Farmer on, 2.8.75, 2.8.205
  - increase of member states in, 3.14.7
  - Melancton Smith on, 6.12.4–5
  - [Pennsylvania] Farmer on, 3.14.6–8
  - raising of men and money in, 2.8.205
  - remedy for weakness of small republic, 3.14.10
  - suggestion of name, 1.54–55
  - See also* confederation
- republics, inimical, possible
  - emergence of, in America, 2.7.142
- republics, large, 4.6.16
  - advantages of, 3.10n3
  - confidence of people in, 1.42
  - defense of, by Plain Truth, 3.8n4
  - demagoguery in, 1.91n38
  - difficulty of governing, 5.7.6
  - evils of, 1.16–17, 2.6.16
  - impracticality of, 3.3.20
  - James Monroe on, 5.21.13
  - Montesquieu on, 2.9.11
  - [Pennsylvania] Farmer on, 3.14.9
  - representation and, 1.43–44
- republics, small, 1.15, 1.23, 1.89n3
  - advantages of, 1.16–21
  - Cato on, 2.6.13
  - confederation of, 2.7.17, 5.3.4
  - Federalist critique of, 1.38, 1.41–47
  - Massachusetts as, 4.7.1
  - vulnerability of, to external force, 3.14.10
- Republicus (pseud.), 5.13
- Requisition of 1781, 3.11.2
- Requisition of 1783, 3.11.2
- requisitions, congressional
  - alternative to direct taxation, 2.8.209, 5.16.25–27
  - arrears due from, 2.7.171
  - federal power to enforce, 4.5.10, 5.9.3
  - of five percent impost, 6.1.45
  - James Monroe on, 5.21.17
  - Luther Martin on, 2.4.56
  - methods of enforcing payment of, 2.5.18
  - Patrick Henry on, 5.16.15
  - Pennsylvania's compliance with, 3.9.84
  - proposed use of, under new Constitution, 5.7.6
  - for raising troops, 2.8.220, 2.9.114
  - during Revolutionary War, 2.7.79
  - state compliance with, 3.11.3, 4.9.25, 5.1.54, 5.14.6
- requisition system, 1.35
  - effectiveness of, 2.8.205, 3.3.38
  - George Mason on, 5.17.1
  - Melancton Smith on, 6.12.40
  - Sidney on, 6.8.1, 6.8.4
  - See also* taxation; taxes
- residency requirement for Congress, 4.22.4
- resources, national
  - Publius on, 4.5n5
  - unlimited government control over, 6.12n33
- responsibilities, congressional, 5.3.10
- responsibility, principle of, 2.9n112
- responsible government, 1.16–18, 5.1.34, 5.1.75
  - proposed Constitution and, 2.7 intro., 5.5.11, 5.16.8
- retirement, constitutional, 2.8.179
- retrospective laws, 2.7.167. *See also* ex post facto laws
- Retz, Cardinal de, 6.14.169
- revenge, 3.3.4
- revenue
  - allocation of, 2.3.6
  - collection of, under Confederation, 2.5.11, 2.8.205

## Index

### revenue (*continued*)

- court cases involving, 5.1.67, 5.4.6, 5.7.7
- Court of Exchequer and, 2.9.143
- farming of, 2.9.69
- federal monopoly of: Brutus on, 2.9.84; Columbian Patriot on, 4.28.4; Melancton Smith on, 6.12.36; Old Whig on, 3.3.33–38; Pennsylvania Convention Minority on, 3.11.21
- forcible collection of, 3.7.2, 3.9.27, 4.3.21
- lack of, under Confederation, 4.10.16, 5.14.48
- See also* taxation; taxes
- revenue, federal, state guarantee for, 4.5.14
- revenue, state
  - effect of federal Constitution on, 2.9.89
  - federal interference with, 5.14.6
- revenue laws, 2.4.49, 4.13.25
  - breach of, 3.11.41
  - definition of, 2.4.51–52
  - enforcement of, 3.4.5
  - penalties for infractions of, 2.9.69
  - oppressiveness of, 2.6.17
  - senatorial amendment of, 4.2.6
- revenue officers, 2.8.169, 2.9.69, 3.11.55, 3.14.7, 4.3.21, 4.17.24
- Revision, Council of (New York), 3.12.16
- Revolution of 1688, 2.8.105, 5.1.41
- revolutionary founders, America's ingratitude toward, 6.14.159
- revolutionary leaders, motives of, impugned, 3.9.19
- Revolutionary War
  - America's wealth exhausted by, 4.2.2
  - conduct of, 2.5.10
  - damage to economy by, 2.8.2
  - debts caused by, 3.14.11
  - economic distress during, 2.7.79
  - financing of, 2.7 intro., 2.8.205
  - government spending during, 3.3.38
  - heroes of, 4.3.14
  - Massachusetts debt from, 4.4.21
  - strength of Confederation during, 5.16.2
  - unity inspired by, 5.7.2

- See also* American Revolution
- Revolutionary War Congress, 2.9.89
- revolution principles, 3.3.43, 3.9.68, 6.14.6–7, 6.14.69
- revolutions, 4.28.2, 5.19.9
- rewards
  - encouragement of virtue by, 4.24.2
  - incentive to action, 5.21.24, 5.21n13
- Reynard, fable of, 5.1.109
- Reynolds, John, 3.11.56
- Rhode Island
  - boycott of Constitutional Convention by, 4.5.2, 4.6n32
  - democratic government of, 4.22.5
  - elections in, 2.8.81, 2.8.87
  - Melancton Smith on, 6.12.40
  - paper money in, 2.9.181, 5.1.113
  - rejection of Constitution by, 6.14.50
  - religion in, 4.24.6, 4.24n3
  - representation of, 2.8.99, 4.14.2, 5.13.12
- Rhode Island Assembly, 3.12.16, 4.6.60, 4.6.61, 4.6.72, 4.6n32
- Rhode Island Man (pseud.), 4.25.2
- rice, 4.5.2
- Richelieu, Cardinal, 5.1.39
- Ridgely, Charles, 5.4.11, 5.4.13
- right, definition of, 5.14.2
- rights
  - government as protector of, 3.12.3
  - gradual loss of, by most nations, 5.19.15
  - insecurity of, in state of nature, 5.14.2
  - mutuality of, among states, 3.6.51
  - need for clear definition of, 3.5.4
  - protection of, under Confederation, 5.14.1
  - relationship of, to obligations, 3.6.47
  - surrender of, implied by silence, 2.8.199
  - treaties and, 2.9.160
- rights, constitutional
  - enumeration of, 2.8.196, 4.23n2
  - superiority of, to ordinary laws, 2.8.80
- rights, declaration of. *See* bill of rights

## Index

- rights, English. *See* Englishmen,  
rights of  
rights, fundamental, and unalienable  
rights, 2.8.80, 2.8n55  
rights, hereditary, 2.4.50  
rights, human, divine origin of,  
2.4.68  
rights, legal, 2.8.80  
rights, natural, 2.4.68  
all government a limitation on,  
6.12.28  
gradual discovery of, 3.12.7  
sacrifice of, in civil compact,  
3.3.22, 4.3.7, 5.1.52, 5.14.2  
slavery and, 4.26.8  
stipulation of, 5.14.10  
rights, reserved, 1.65  
Aristides on, 5.1n3  
Brutus on, 2.9.24  
Cincinnatus on, 6.1.4  
explicit statement of, 4.6.70  
Federal Farmer on, 2.8.197  
Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.2  
James Wilson on, 4.6.51, 4.17.2  
John Francis Mercer on, 5.5.8  
[Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.14  
Patrick Henry on, 5.16.36  
rights, unalienable, 2.8.49, 2.8.80,  
3.3.23  
riot act, 5.16.2  
roads, 3.2.3  
federal jurisdiction over, 3.13.3  
state contracts for, 3.14.18  
robbery, 2.9.86  
government made tool of, 4.26.8  
Robbins, Caroline, 1.39  
Rogers, George C., 5.11 intro. n3  
Rollin, Charles, 6.8.16  
Roman Catholics (Papists)  
eligibility of, for public office,  
4.23.3(9)  
exclusion of, advised, 4.24.5  
Roman emperors, failure of, to  
maintain unity, 2.7.94, 3.11.17  
Roman Empire  
disintegration of, 3.11.17  
example of, for America, 2.6.34  
survival of republican institutions  
in, 6.13.26  
Roman Republic  
aristocratic government of,  
2.8.105  
citizen army of, 5.14.8  
contrast of, with Carthage, 4.6.49  
internal disharmony in, 5.12.13  
irregularities of, 4.6.6, 4.6.49  
representation in, 2.8.97, 2.8.107  
and standing armies, 6.1.23  
subjection of, to tyranny, 2.7.67,  
3.10.1, 4.17.22  
submission of, to military rule,  
4.20.4  
territorial extent of, 2.9.12,  
3.3.20, 5.1.53  
variety of its constituent parts,  
5.1.108  
Romans, ancient  
early history of, 6.8.12  
Mercy Warren on, 6.14.108n,  
6.14.123, 6.14.135–36  
religion and, 3.16.14, 5.1.106  
Samnites and, 4.12.10  
Romans, King of the, 5.1.74  
Roses, Wars of the, 5.1.75  
rotation (of officials), 3.8.3, 6.14.8  
Charles Turner on, 4.18.1  
Columbian Patriot on, 4.28.4  
under Confederation, 2.8.147  
Gouverneur Morris' opposition  
to, 6.12n25  
Melancton Smith on, 6.12.27–28  
neglect of, in proposed Constitu-  
tion, 2.8.133  
in Pennsylvania, 3.11.48  
popular influence and, 3.4.2  
in presidency, 5.11.8  
in republic of Lucca, 4.25.4  
Republicus on, 5.13.4  
Robert Livingston on, 1.44  
in Senate, 2.7.23, 2.9.201  
William Symmes on, 4.5.7  
Rousseau, Jean-Jacques, 4.25 intro.,  
4.25.3  
royal government (Pennsylvania),  
6.6.17–18  
Rudolph of Hapsburg, 5.1.74  
rulers  
Federalist confidence in, 1.50–51  
virtuousness of, not to be relied  
upon, 1.73  
rulers, future, to remedy defects in  
Constitution, 3.3.51  
rulers, interests of, and interests of  
people, 2.9.108  
rum, tax on, 5.2.2  
rural interests, representation of, at

## Index

- rural interests (*continued*)
  - Constitutional Convention, 3.1.5, 3.32.2
- Rush, Benjamin, 6.1.2, 6.6.40, 6.11n21
  - on bills of rights, 1.68, 3.16.12
  - on British reaction to proposed Constitution, 3.9.40
  - Federalist pamphleteer, 2.7.158, 2.7n81
  - metaphysical disquisitions of, 4.12.5
  - at Pennsylvania Convention, 3.9n19
    - on separate confederacies, 1.86n2
- Russell, Benjamin, 3.9.4, 3.9.23
- Russia, 2.9.87, 5.1.99
- Rutland, Robert, 2.2 intro., 4.28 intro., 5.11 intro. n1
- Rutland, Statute of, 2.9.143
- Rutledge, Edward, 5.12n4, 5.12n11
- Rutledge, John, 1.30
- sabbath, laws for observance of, 4.24.4
- Sagadahock, 2.4.100, 2.4.106
- Saint-Evremond, 6.14.146
- salaries, congressional
  - Friend to the Rights of the People on, 4.23.3
  - power of Congress over, 2.5.41, 4.10.8–9
- salaries, government, 4.3.23, 4.17.6, 6.10.6
- salary men, 2.8.61
- Sallust, 6.8.12
- salt tax, 5.2.2
- Samnites, 4.12.10
- Samuel (prophet), 3.9.24, 6.7.8, 6.8.14, 6.12.7
- Samuel (pseud.), 4.14
- sanctions
  - Confederation's inability to enforce, 5.16n11
  - use of, against states, 4.26.11
- San Marino, republic of, 1.45, 4.25.3, 4.25.4, 5.1.78
- Saul, King, 6.7.8
- Saxons, 4.28.4, 5.1.64
- scholastic philosophy, fine distinctions of, 3.6.50, 3.12.11
- schools, curriculum recommended for, 5.1.82
- science, 4.3.24, 5.3.19
- Scipios (Roman family), 5.1.107–8
- Scotland, 4.6.25
  - aristocracy in, 5.1.27
  - degradation of, 4.6.76
  - disadvantages of, 6.4.2
  - impoverishment of, 4.6.25, 4.6.53
  - law courts in, 3.11.40
  - representation of, in Parliament, 5.16.25
  - union of, with England, 5.12.2, 5.16.25, 6.4.1–3
- Scots
  - dislike of, in England, 6.4.2
  - emigration of, to America, 5.7.8
- Scots-Irish, in Pennsylvania, 6.6.18
- seaports, characteristics of voters in, 4.10.11
- seamen, American, unemployment among, 3.3.32
- search and seizure
  - by excise officers, 5.2.2
  - Massachusetts constitution and, 4.3.22
  - Son of Liberty on, 6.2.2
  - Virginia constitution and, 5.16.37
- search and seizure, unreasonable, 5.6.5
  - freedom from, 2.7.1
  - protection against, 2.7.55, 2.8.86, 2.8.200, 3.3.30
- search warrants
  - limitations on, 2.8.53, 2.9.28
  - oaths required for, 5.4.6
  - See also* warrants
- seat of government, 4.3.28
- secession, 4.13.17, 5.16.8
- secrecy
  - in civil law proceedings, 2.8.192
  - in congressional proceedings, 4.5.2, 3.13.5, 4.23.3(3), 6.9.2
  - in executive department, 2.5.22
  - at Constitutional Convention, 2.4.7, 2.4.13, 2.6.8, 2.7.30, 3.6.9
  - in negotiating treaties, 2.8.147
  - Patrick Henry on, 5.16.20
  - Republican Federalist on, 4.13.26
- secrecy, oaths of, 6.8.28
- Secret Proceedings*, 2.4 intro.
- Sedgwick, Theodore, 4.13n25
- sedition, 4.14.3, 5.16.2
- Seldon, John, 5.1.73

## Index

- selectmen, 4.13.14
- self-defense, 3.11.13, 4.17.4, 4.28.2
- self-government, Americans' ap-  
titude for, 5.1.52
- self-incrimination, protection  
against, 2.8.86, 2.9.27, 3.11.13
- self-interest
  - dependence of proposed Con-  
stitution on, 1.72
  - Federalist reliance on, 1.41
  - insufficiency of, 1.74
  - promotion of common good by,  
4.6.26
- selfishness, 3.10n3, 5.18.8
- self-love
  - operation of, in government,  
2.9.45, 5.16.14, 5.16.17
  - motive of Framers, 3.16.18
- self-preservation, law of, 3.1n3,  
3.16.8, 4.18.1
- self-sacrifice, 5.21.12
- Senate, Danish, 5.1.36
- Senate, federal, 2.4.16, 3.3.53,  
5.1.94
  - Anti-Federalist animus toward,  
1.49
  - appointment of, by executive,  
5.1.74
  - apportionment of representatives  
in, 2.9.40, 2.9.199, 2.9n26
  - arguments against, 5.13.7
  - aristocratic nature of, 2.7.48
  - characteristics of, 2.8.28
  - Cincinnatus on, 6.1.26–36
  - Columbian Patriot on, 4.28.4
  - common people excluded from,  
2.8.54
  - composition of, 2.7.22
  - compromise on, in Constitutional  
Convention, 2.9.199
  - constitution of, 2.9.198–201
  - corruption of, by executive,  
5.3.20
  - criticisms of, 1.92–93n3
  - Countryman on, 6.7.1
  - Countryman from Dutchess  
County on, 6.6.45
  - dangers of its connection with  
president, 6.1.27
  - executive functions of, 2.8.145,  
2.9.202
  - federal nature of, 2.8.28, 2.8n22
  - filling vacancies in, 2.5.41, 2.6.37
  - George Mason on, 2.2.3–4,  
2.2.7–8
  - guard against rash measures,  
2.4.53
  - and House of Representatives:  
Federal Farmer on, 2.8.100,  
2.8.170; John DeWitt on,  
4.3.14; Luther Martin on,  
2.4.38, 2.4.51; Montezuma on,  
3.4.2; Republican Federalist on,  
4.13.28
  - Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.33
  - in impeachment proceedings,  
2.4.88, 2.6.45
  - James Monroe on, 5.21.32–33
  - John Adams on, 5.12.4
  - John DeWitt on, 4.3.12
  - John Francis Mercer on, 5.5.7
  - judicial function of, 2.9.202
  - legislative, judicial, and executive  
powers of, 3.11.42, 6.1.26,  
6.11.16
  - legislative functions of, 2.9.202,  
6.1.32
  - local interests counteracted by,  
6.12.32
  - management of foreign affairs by,  
2.8.146
  - nonaristocratic character of,  
2.8.145
  - nonrepresentative character of,  
5.13.12
  - organization of, 1.59, 3.14.14
  - privy council for president,  
2.4.42, 2.4.88
  - proposed selection of Supreme  
Court justices by, 2.4.16
  - and raising troops, 2.9.114
  - relationship of, to president: Cato  
on, 2.6.26; Federal Farmer on,  
2.8.170–71; James Monroe on,  
5.21.34; John DeWitt on,  
4.3.13; Luther Martin on,  
2.4.42; Officer of the Late Con-  
tinental Army on, 3.8.3; Penn-  
sylvania Convention Minority  
on, 3.11.45; William Symmes  
on, 4.5.2
  - removal of executive powers  
from, 3.6.41, 3.11.13
  - representation in, 2.4.34
  - representation of people in, 4.5.7
  - representation of states in, 2.7.23,

## Index

- Senate, federal (*continued*)  
     2.9.199, 6.13.21  
     Republicus on, 5.13.12  
     Richard Henry Lee on, 5.6.2  
     small size of, 2.8.22  
     support for state governments by,  
         2.4.42, 2.8.146  
     in treaty-making process, 2.8.147,  
         2.5.41  
     unlimited power of, 2.7.49  
     usurpation of power by, 5.13.13  
     William Symmes on, 4.5.2  
 Senate, president of, 4.13.13  
 Senate, Roman  
     conflicts of, with Plebeians,  
         5.12.13  
     and imperial regime, 2.7.36  
     and Julius Caesar, 4.28.2, 5.1.101  
     large assembly, 2.8.136  
     perpetuation of dictatorship by,  
         5.10.2  
     taxation by, 2.8.106  
 Senate, Swedish, 5.1.35  
 senate, triennial, 6.6.34  
 Senate, Venetian, 4.6.60  
 senates  
     proper composition of, 5.1.31  
     standing armies and, 5.1.33  
 senates, state, 4.3.14  
 senators, federal  
     appointment of, 2.8.144  
     division of, into three classes,  
         3.6.15, 3.6.42  
     divorce of, from people, 2.9.200  
     election of: Federal Farmer on,  
         2.8.164, 2.8.214; Gentleman in a  
         Neighbouring State on, 4.2.6;  
         Luther Martin on, 2.4.16,  
         2.4.41, 2.4.49; by people,  
         5.14.34; Rawlins Lowndes on,  
         5.12.2; Republicus on, 5.13.12;  
         states and, 2.4.16, 2.8.214,  
         3.14.14  
     eligibility of, for other govern-  
         ment posts, 2.4.46–48  
     exclusion of, from state offices,  
         2.4.46  
     immunity of from arrest, 3.4.3  
     impeachment of, 2.5.41  
     independence of popular control,  
         4.3.12  
     independence of states, 2.4.42  
     individual votes of, 2.8.143, 6.6.45  
     judges of impeachments, 3.16.15  
     payment of, by states, 4.10.8–9  
     proposed amendment regarding,  
         6.12.25–35  
     recall of, 2.9.201, 6.12.25,  
         6.12.27–28  
     reelection of, 2.1 intro. n6,  
         2.9.201, 6.12.25, 6.12.27  
     salaries of, 3.14.15, 4.23.3(3)  
     small number of, 3.9.95,  
         3.11.34–35, 5.3.17  
     and state legislatures, 1.89n61,  
         2.4.16, 2.8.164, 2.8.214, 2.9.201  
     term of office: Brutus on, 2.9.200;  
         Cato on, 2.6.37; Centinel on,  
         2.7.74; Cincinnatus on, 6.1.27;  
         congressional power to change,  
         3.16.4; Federal Farmer on,  
         2.8.147; Friend to the Rights of  
         the People on, 4.23.3(1); Mon-  
         tezuma on, 3.4.3; Samuel Chase  
         on, 5.3.17  
     *See also* legislators, federal  
 senators, state, 2.8.116  
*senatus consultum*, 2.7.36  
 Seneca, 4.13.3  
 sensible ass, fable of, 3.9.28  
 Sentiments of Many, 5.20  
 separation of powers, 2.8.86,  
     2.9n112, 3.11.13, 6.6.34, 6.14.9  
 Agrippa on, 4.6.73  
 Anti-Federalist attitudes toward,  
     1.54–55  
 Brutus [Virginia] on, 5.15.1  
 distinguished from balancing of  
     orders, 2.7n4  
 and Federalist theory of balanced  
     government, 1.59–63, 2.7.7,  
     2.7.10  
 exceptions to, 2.8.175  
 inviolability of, 2.9.147  
 James Monroe on, 5.21.19  
 neglect of, in plan for Senate,  
     2.9.203, 3.11.42  
 Richard Henry Lee on, 5.6.1  
 and separation of functions,  
     1.62–63  
 and state constitutions, 3.12.16  
 theory of, established in America,  
     3.12.17  
 violation of, in new Constitution,  
     2.6.35, 2.7.50, 6.1.26–32,  
     6.13.32



## Index

- Sergeant, Jonathan Dickinson,  
1.82n35
- Settlement, Act of, 3.3.23
- Seventh Amendment, 3.5n6
- several states, federal Constitution's  
use of the words, 3.13.2
- Shaftesbury, Earl of (Anthony  
Ashley Cooper), 3.6.7, 3.10.8,  
5.7.9
- Shawnee Indians, 5.1.47
- Shays, Daniel, 6.14.28
- Shays' rebellion, vol. 4 intro.  
and abuses in judiciary, 2.9.176  
Brutus on, 2.9.127  
and desire for strong government,  
2.7.182  
James Winthrop and, 4.6. intro.  
Mercy Warren on, 6.14.24–37  
reprieve of insurgents in, 6.14.36  
suppression of, 2.6.16, 4.9.38  
Vox Populi on, 4.4.30
- sheriffs, 2.8.169  
appointment of, 2.8.176  
in England, 4.17.24  
replacement of, by army officers,  
2.8.39  
supervision of, by state legisla-  
tures, 5.16.6  
in Vermont and Massachusetts,  
4.6.8
- sheriffs, federal, 5.16.6
- Sherman, Roger, 1.38, 2.9n23,  
3.3n33, 3.3n35
- shipbuilding industry  
neglect of, by Congress, 3.9.48  
Richard Henry Lee on, 5.6.4  
stagnation of, 3.3.32, 4.6.11
- shipping, U.S.  
British and French seizure of,  
6.14.100  
power of states to regulate,  
2.4.73–74
- ships of war  
expense of building, 3.9.22  
large states' construction of,  
3.9.29  
states' need for, 5.14.11
- shipwrecks, 4.25.3
- Short, William, 6.1 intro. n2
- Sibyl, 4.12.6
- Siberian wheat, 4.25.5
- Sidney, Algernon, 5.1.13, 6.14.10  
on annual election of magistrates,  
2.6.36–37  
devotion of, to liberty, 6.8.20  
opposition to Charles I, 5.1.73  
on parliamentary control of mili-  
tary, 5.11.7  
Republicus on, 5.13.9  
on standing armies, 4.3.29  
on usefulness of suspicion, 6.1.12
- Sidney (pseud.), 6.8; 2.6 intro., 2.9  
intro.
- signers of federal Constitution  
lack of conviction among, 3.11.5  
motivations of, 3.8.9
- silver, 2.4.76, 3.10.5
- simple government, 1.56, 1.58
- sinécures, 3.16.1, 3.16.14n
- Sixteen Seceding Members, 2.2  
intro., 2.7 intro. n7  
Anti-Federalist boycott of  
Pennsylvania Assembly, 3.2  
intro.  
Federal Republican on, 3.6.7  
Philadelphiensis on, 3.9.60  
*See also* Pennsylvania House  
Minority
- skepticism, 6.14.148–49
- slander, 4.3.25
- Slave (pseud.), 6.2.1, 6.2n1
- slave owners, concessions to, 6.12.8
- slave revolts, 6.6.36
- slavery, 2.7.75, 4.2n6  
abolition of, 2.4.69, 4.26.12  
in ancient Greece and Rome,  
4.6.6  
Benjamin Franklin and, 6.6.8  
congressional statement against,  
4.26.15  
Consider Arms et al. on, 4.26.8  
constitutional provisions relating  
to, 3.6.22  
effect of, on southern mores,  
4.6.48  
encouragement of, by proposed  
Constitution, 2.4.45, 4.26.8  
Federalist and Anti-Federalist at-  
titudes toward, 1.9n20  
Federalist opposition to, 3.9.14  
forbidden by Christianity, 3.16.14  
imposition of, by Virginia Plan,  
2.4.29, 2.4.34  
increase of, after 1808, 4.26.12  
injustice of, 2.9.39  
Luther Martin on, 2.4.68

## Index

### slavery (*continued*)

necessity of, to South Carolina, 5.12.1  
 profits generated by, 4.5.2  
 Republicus on, 5.13.14  
 slavery, political, 5.13.10  
 slaves, 6.10.4  
   allowance of representatives for, 2.1 intro. n6, 2.6.39, 2.9.39, 4.13.22  
   danger of, to southern states, 5.12n6  
   emancipation of, 4.2.3, 4.26.4, 4.26.14, 5.12n6  
   free birth of, 4.19.3  
   John Locke on, 4.13.22  
   people of America compared to, 3.7.1-2  
   reluctance to mention, 2.4.64  
   taxation based on, 2.7.76, 4.10.19  
   treatment of, 4.26.8  
   right of slaveowners to recover, 5.12n6  
   *See also* three-fifths clause  
 slaves, importation of  
   Consider Arms et al. on, 4.26.8-15  
   states powerless to prevent, 3.13.5  
 slave ships, 2.26.8  
 slave states, 4.13.22  
 slave trade, 3.8.3  
   abolition of, 2.4n24  
   American engagement in, 4.2.9  
   British participation in, 4.27.3  
   Centinel on, 2.7.76  
   compromise on, 2.2 intro., 2.4.67, 6.6.13  
   congressional consent for prohibition of, 3.13.3  
   constitutional regulation of, 2.2.14  
   Constitution's threat to, 5.12.1  
   controversy over, 2.4.64-71  
   Countryman on, 6.7.6  
   Countryman from Dutchess County on, 6.6.4, 6.6.34  
   encouragement of, by proposed Constitution, 2.6.35  
   eventual prohibition of, 2.8.229  
   Friend to the Rights of the People on, 4.23.3(5)  
   Luther Martin on, 2.4.45  
   means of increasing southern rep-

resentation, 2.9.39  
 Rawlins Lowndes on, 5.12.1  
 Republicus on, 5.13.14  
 Sentiments of Many on, 5.20.6  
 U.S. protection of, 4.26.14-15  
 "small party," 4.9.38  
 Smilie, John  
   cited by Helvidius Priscus, 4.12.6  
   debate with Wilson and McKean, 4.6.57  
   on popular support for state governments, 1.90-91n25  
   Pennsylvania Anti-Federalist leader, vol. 3 intro., 3.1 intro.  
   Pennsylvania Convention Minority, 3.11.56  
 Smith, John R., vol. 5, pt. 2, intro. n1  
 Smith, Melancton, 6.12; 2.9 intro. n8  
   author of Plebeian address, 6.11 intro.  
   on balance between union and liberty, 1.24  
   on closeness of representatives to people, 1.17  
   on interaction between people and government, 1.19  
   at New York convention, vol. 6, pt. 1, intro.  
   on representation, 3.4 intro.  
   on suppositions about human nature, 1.52  
   on yeomanry, 1.18  
 Smith, William, 6.6n11  
 smuggling, 2.9.63, 3.9.29, 5.9.8  
 soap, tax on, 3.16.17, 5.2.2  
 social contract, 2.9.24. *See also* compacts, political and social  
*Social Contract* (Rousseau), 4.25.3  
 social groups, conflicting interests of, 2.8.97  
 society  
   benefits of, 4.3.24  
   dissolution of, 4.10.5  
   educative function of, 1.47  
   ends of, 2.7.1  
   formation of, 5.14.2  
   origin of, 4.6.68  
   reasons for entering into, 6.13.17  
 Socrates, 5.1.21  
 soldiers  
   bias of, against conscientious ob-

- soldiers (*continued*)
  - jectors, 3.9.11
  - employment of, in national army, 2.8.61
  - terms of enlistment, 5.4.6
  - vices of, 5.14.8
- Solomon, King, 3.3.17, 5.1.102
- Solon, 4.3.10, 5.1.23, 6.8.36
- Somers, Baron (John Somers), 5.1.7, 5.1.10
- Some Observations on the Constitution*, 5.21
  - James Monroe's suppression of, 5.21 intro.
- Somerset County, Maryland, 5.4.3
- Son of Liberty (pseud.), 6.2
- sophistry, 3.4.5, 3.8.2, 3.8.5, 4.12.10, 5.1.91
- Sophocles, 5.1.21
- soul, immortality of, 3.16.15, 5.1.92
- South Carolina
  - biennial elections in, 2.8.88
  - Episcopal church in, 3.12.18
  - importation of slaves by, 5.12.1
  - loss of slaves by, during Revolution, 4.26.10
  - necessity of slavery to, 5.12.1
  - revenue and representation of, 4.14.2
  - role of governor in, 3.12.16
  - separation of law from equity in, 2.8.195
  - unattractive climate of, 5.12.3
  - vote of, against prohibition of slave trade, 2.4.65
- South Carolina, University of, 5.12 intro. n3
- South Carolina constitution, 5.1.44
- South Carolina convention, vol. 5 intro., 5.12 intro. n1, 5.12 intro. n3
- South Carolina legislature, 4.6.61, 5.12
- South Carolina Senate, 2.8.89
- South Carolinian Library, 5.12 intro. n3
- southern confederacy, 2.5.27–29, vol. 5, pt. 2, intro.
- southern states, 4.2n6
  - and allowance for slaves in representation, 2.8.61
  - control of, aristocracy, 2.8.26
  - coercion of northern minority by, 4.2.11
  - comparison of, with north, 2.6.18, 2.6n13
  - compensation of, at expense of Africans, 4.26.10
  - demand by, for protection of slave trade, 4.26.10
  - disadvantage of, in Congress, 5.6.3
  - disunity of, in Congress, 5.7.8
  - improbability of migration to, 5.12.3
  - inhabitants of, 4.6.48
  - interests of, threatened, 2.2.11
  - Patrick Henry on, 5.16.6
  - and prevention of direct taxation, 4.13.23
  - Rawlins Lowndes on, 5.12.1
  - rejection of Constitution by, 3.9.42
  - representation of, 4.2.4
  - revenue of, 2.7.76
  - slavery an advantage to, 2.4.45
  - and slavery controversy, 2.4.67
  - tax apportionment for, 4.10.19
  - trade of, 4.6.37
  - undue weight of, in federal government, 2.9.39
- South Sea Bubble, 6.8.34
- sovereign authority, 2.9.13, 3.14.15
- sovereignties, conflicting, 5.14.4
- sovereignties, coordinate, 2.7.99, 3.11.23
- sovereignties, dual
  - Anti-Federalist view of, 1.12
  - inconsistency of, 5.10.2, 5.14.4
  - James Monroe on, 1.81n32
- sovereignty, 1.54
  - attribute of legislature, 1.61, 2.4.54
  - definition of, 3.14.2–3
  - of federal government, 3.14.19
  - necessary ingredients of, 6.1.40
  - [Pennsylvania] Farmer on, 3.14.2–5
  - taxation and, 3.14.5
  - usurpation of, by Constitutional Convention, 2.7.67
- sovereignty, democratic, 3.11.26
- sovereignty, divided, 1.33, 1.34, 1.37, 4.6.21
- sovereignty, popular, 2.6.8, 2.7.9

## Index

### Spain

- absolutism in, 2.8.178
- aristocracy in, 5.1.29
- Jay negotiations with, 5.16 intro., 5.16.21
- [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.40
- possible war with, 2.9.121–22
- provincial assemblies in, 2.8.103
- royal prerogative in, 5.16.36
- standing armies in, 4.3.29
- treaty connections with, 4.27.5
- Spanish America, 4.6.16, 4.6.48
- Sparta, 5.1.47, 5.1.64
  - example of, 2.6.13
  - laws of Lycurgus, 3.3.2
  - loss of liberty in, 4.17.22
  - representation in, 2.8.97
  - virtues of, 4.28.8
- Spaulding, E. Wilder, 2.6 intro., 6.3 intro., 6.7 intro. n1
- specialists, danger of leaving government to, 4.3.24
- specie
  - circulation of, 4.18.2
  - exchange of paper currency for, 5.16.39
  - export of, 2.7.66, 2.7.103, 6.14.20
  - payment of public debt in, 4.9.30, 6.1.43
  - See also* cash
- speculation, evils of, 6.14.19, 6.14.71
- speculators
  - interest of, in Indian lands, 6.6.36
  - payment of, in hard money, 6.1.47
- speech, freedom of, 2.7.1, 3.11.13
- Spinola, Ambrogio di, 5.1.47
- spirits, taxes on, 2.9.59
- Springfield, Massachusetts, 6.14.28, 6.14.30
- stability, political, 1.7–8
- stadtholder (Netherlands), 4.25.4
  - attempt of, to establish despotism, 5.1.38
  - defiance of States-General by, 5.9.10
  - ruinous influence of, 5.16.11
  - Sidney on, 6.8.2
- Stamp Act (1765), 2.7.121, 6.6.19
- stamp duties, 2.4.55, 3.16.17
  - Federal Farmer on, 2.8.36
  - means of controlling press, 3.8.3, 3.13.5
  - Son of Liberty on, 6.2.2

- states forbidden to levy, 3.3.32
- stamp officers, 4.3.31
- standing army, 2.2.13, 5.6.5, 6.10.5
  - Agrippa on, 4.6.21
  - Alfredus on, 4.17n13
  - amendment forbidding, 5.4.7
  - Anti-Federalist fear of, 1.84n12
  - attempts to establish in America, 6.14.96
  - authorization for, 2.7.122
  - Benjamin Franklin on, 6.6.18
  - Brutus on, 2.9.17, 2.9.29, 2.9.104–14, 2.9.126
  - Cato on, 2.6.4, 2.6.17
  - Centinel on, 2.7.47, 2.7.55
  - Cincinnatus on, 6.1.23–25
  - and collection of taxes, 3.7.2
  - Columbian Patriot on, 4.28.4
  - conversion of militia into, 4.2.8
  - composition of, 3.9.27
  - Countryman on, 6.6.28
  - Customer on, 4.6.1
  - Democratic Federalist on, 3.5.2, 3.5.10
  - Denatus on, 5.18.12
  - engine of arbitrary power, 2.4.59, 2.4.62, 2.7.11
  - in England, 5.1.41
  - Federal Farmer on, 2.8.39, 2.8.168
  - Federalist Republican on, 3.6.21
  - and frontier defense, 4.3.14
  - Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.8
  - James Wilson on, 2.9n73, 6.1.37, 6.1n10
  - John DeWitt on, 4.3.9, 4.3.14, 4.3.28–29
  - [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.33, 5.1.45–49
  - means of seizing power, 3.11.51
  - means of violating people's rights, 3.3.29
  - and national defense, 2.9.121–23
  - national militia substitute for, 5.21.17
  - [New Hampshire] Farmer on, 4.17.4
  - Old Whig on, 3.3.29, 3.3.53
  - Patrick Henry on, 5.16.2
  - Pennsylvania constitution on, 6.1.37
  - Pennsylvania Convention Minority on, 3.11.13, 3.11.51
  - Philadelphiensis on, 3.9.22,

## Index

- standing army (*continued*)  
 3.9.27, 3.9.41, 3.9.45  
 poverty as security against, 5.1.45  
 Richard Price on, 5.11.4  
 separation of from people, 5.1.33  
 size and purpose of, 4.3.27  
 Son of Liberty on, 6.2.2  
 in state constitutions, 2.9.112,  
 2.9n21, 2.9n76, 6.1.37  
 strength of Congress established  
 by, 4.13.25  
 supposed benefit of, 5.16.2  
 taxes to support, 3.3.33  
 use of, to keep people in awe,  
 3.9.27  
 use of, to suppress sedition,  
 4.14.3  
 uselessness of, in repelling foreign  
 foe, 3.9.22  
 William Pulteney on, 2.9.99  
*See also* army, peacetime  
 Star Chamber, 2.1 intro. n6, 6.1.7  
 state, affairs of, legislators' lack of  
 interest in, 3.3.3  
 state, interference of, in religious  
 matters, 4.24.1  
 state attorney, 2.8.169, 4.21.1  
*State Gazette of South Carolina*,  
 5.10  
 state governments  
 annihilation of: Brutus on,  
 2.9.194, 2.9.199; Centinel on,  
 2.7.94; George Clinton on,  
 6.13.24; George Mason on,  
 5.17.1; Impartial Examiner on,  
 5.14.10; James Wilson on,  
 4.13n4; Luther Martin on,  
 2.4.39, 2.4.44, 2.4.62; Old Whig  
 on, 3.3.20; Samuel on, 4.14.4;  
 Samuel Chase on, 5.3.16;  
 Watchman on, 4.22.4  
 conflict of, with federal govern-  
 ment: Cato Uticensis on, 5.7.9;  
 Centinel on, 2.7.99; George  
 Clinton on, 6.13.11–13; Luther  
 Martin on, 2.4.58, 2.4.96–97;  
 Officer of the Late Continental  
 Army on, 3.8.3; Old Whig on,  
 3.3.37; Patrick Henry on,  
 5.16.27  
 Congress and, 2.7.99  
 consolidated nature of, 2.8.205  
 contradictions of, 3.12.18  
 control of militia by, 2.8.170,  
 2.8.174, 4.9.22  
 debts of, 2.7 intro., 2.8.39, 2.8.209,  
 2.9.63, 4.1.3  
 defective administration of,  
 2.8.206  
 defense of people by, 2.8.138  
 definition of their authority,  
 2.5.41, 3.11.22, 5.17.1  
 dependence of, on new federal  
 government, 6.9.5  
 description of, 2.8.87  
 efficiency of, 4.6.18  
 erosion of popular support for,  
 1.90–91n25  
 expense of, 2.8.209  
 and federal taxing power, 2.8.205  
 Fisher Ames on, 1.11  
 Framers' desire to protect, 1.2n29  
 and litigation in federal courts,  
 2.8.224  
 means and ends of, 1.29–32  
 Melancton Smith on, 6.12.35,  
 6.12.40  
 ministerial power of, 3.14.16  
 oath to support, 2.8.229  
 people's assent to abolition of,  
 5.3.16  
 and "perfect union," 2.9.151  
 popular control of, 2.8.129  
 precedence of, over local gov-  
 ernment, 2.8.56  
 protectors of individual rights,  
 2.4.38, 2.4.44  
 reduction of, to role of peti-  
 tioners, 2.8.128  
 relation of to people, 2.4.114,  
 2.8.21  
 restrictions on, 6.7.14  
 role of, in new system, 2.8.128  
 rotation of officials in, 2.8.147  
 subversion of, by proposed Con-  
 stitution, 2.9.139  
 supposed inability of, to manage  
 their own affairs, 5.16.9  
 and suspension of Habeas Corpus  
 Act, 2.4.72  
 taxing power of, 2.4.55, 2.9.63  
 violation of their sovereignty,  
 2.3.5, 2.7.38  
 yeomanry and, 2.8.39  
*State of Facts* (Elbridge Gerry),  
 2.1n1

## Index

- State house speech (James Wilson),  
1.65, 2.2 intro.
- state legislatures. *See* legislatures,  
state
- state officials  
oath of, to support federal Con-  
stitution, 2.4.16, 4.6.19  
oaths of allegiance sworn by,  
6.7.9  
opposition of, to proposed Con-  
stitution, 2.4.118, 2.4n44,  
2.7.57, 2.7n33, 6.13.12  
relation of, to federal officials,  
6.12.31
- state presidents, 4.17.3
- states  
ability of, to exist without federal  
government, 3.14.8, 3.14n5  
admission of new, 2.4.16, 2.4.34,  
2.4.99–107, 4.23.3(8), 5.20.6  
agreements between, 3.13.3, 4.5.2  
alliances among, 2.4.45  
authority of, to maintain troops,  
2.8.200  
autonomy of, in internal affairs,  
3.14.7  
basic similarity of, 6.1.38  
capacity of, to dissent, 3.14n8  
as checks on federal government,  
1.69  
under Confederation, 2.7.37,  
2.7.98, 3.3.8, 3.6.12, 5.21.5–6  
confinement of, to their own af-  
fairs, 4.5.3  
congressional jealousy of, 5.3.16  
constituent elements of Union,  
2.4.39  
Constitution's use of word, 3.13.2  
in controversies involving citizens  
of other states, 2.9.160, 4.6.52  
division of, into districts, 2.9.52,  
4.13.29, 5.9.4  
effects of disunity on, 2.5.25  
equality of: Federal Farmer on,  
2.8.143; Luther Martin on,  
2.4.13, 2.4.29–31, 2.4.41; Re-  
publicus on, 5.13.12  
exclusion of, from national sys-  
tem, 2.5.21, 5.16.1, 5.21.18  
extinction of their independence,  
3.6.29  
faith and credit of, 2.9.161  
Federal Farmer's concern with,  
2.8 intro.  
financial responsibilities of, 2.9.81  
financial support of federal gov-  
ernment by, 2.4.30, 2.8.162  
foreign agents in, 4.13.26  
formation and training of militia  
by, 2.8.217  
gradual erosion of their power,  
6.12.38–39  
heterogeneity of, 6.1.38  
incompetence of, to levy imposts,  
3.14.11  
judgments against, for debt,  
2.9.163  
libels against, 4.8.1  
litigation of, with their own citi-  
zens, 2.7.42, 2.7.n22  
natural inequality of, 4.6.28–29,  
5.15.1  
and naval construction, 3.9.29  
obligations of, to each other,  
2.4.110, 2.4.112, 2.4.114  
opposing interests of, 4.3.14  
opposing views on, 1.13  
original separate status of, 5.21.4  
power retained by, 2.9.9, 3.6.48  
as preservers of liberty, 1.15  
proper responsibilities of, 2.8.130  
protection of, from federal inter-  
ference, 4.6.45  
protection of, from lawsuits,  
4.15.4  
quarrels among: Brutus on,  
2.9.160; Centinel on, 2.7.142;  
Cornelius on, 4.10.12; Edmund  
Randolph on, 2.5.30; Luther  
Martin on, 2.4.89; Samuel  
Chase on, 5.3.11; William  
Symmes on, 4.5.2  
reduction of their power, 5.10.2,  
5.16.6  
representation of: Brutus on,  
2.9.199; Federal Farmer on,  
2.8.147; George Clinton on,  
6.13.21; Georgian on, 5.9.4;  
[Pennsylvania] Farmer on,  
3.14.8, 3.14.15; Philadelphiensis  
on, 3.9.24  
resistance of, to federal govern-  
ment, 2.8.131, 2.8.211  
revenue of, 2.8.220, 3.3.33, 4.5.16  
right of, to alter their form of gov-  
ernment, 4.5.2

## Index

- states (*continued*)
  - right of, to regulate Indian affairs, 6.9.9
  - role of, in confederacies, 6.13.23
  - senates of, 4.3.14
  - suits against, 2.8.43, 2.9.161
  - unanimous agreement of, 4.4.13
  - varied laws and customs of, 2.9.16, 4.3.6
  - votes of, in Congress, 3.6.12, 5.9.4
- state sovereignty, 1.9
  - Brutus on, 2.9.63
  - Cato on, 5.10.2
  - Centinel on, 2.7.37, 2.7.98
  - Charles Pinckney on, 5.12n7
  - Cincinnatus on, 6.1.40
  - Columbian Patriot on, 4.28.5
  - under Confederation, 5.21.6, 5.21.8, 5.21.12
  - Democratic Federalist on, 3.4.5
  - Federal Farmer on, 2.8.147
  - George Clinton on, 6.13.16, 6.13.31
  - in Holland, 5.16.2
  - Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.4
  - incompatibility of, with federal union, 3.8n1
  - Luther Martin on, 2.4.38
  - Officer of the Late Continental Army on, 3.8.3
  - Old Whig on, 3.3.8
  - Pennsylvania Convention Minority on, 3.11.13
  - Rawlins Lowndes on, 5.12.2
- state spirit, James Monroe on evils of, 5.21.18, 5.21.34
- states, agricultural, 5.6.4
- states, commercial, 2.4.67
  - revenue produced by, 2.4.45, 4.6.78
- states, delinquent, 2.5.7, 2.7.169
  - dangers of compelling payment by, 2.8.205
  - excessive generosity toward, 3.9.85
  - support for proposed Constitution among, 3.14.22
- states, inland, 4.5.16
- states, large
  - ability of, to outvote small states, 2.4.45
  - ambition of, 2.4.34
  - arguments favoring their dominance, 2.4.28
  - attempt of, to dominate small states, 2.4.15
  - delegates of, at Constitutional Convention, 2.4.25
  - division of, 2.4.103–7, 2.6.16, 2.6n11
  - effort to disguise their dominance, 2.4.45
  - expanding populations of, 2.4.36
  - influence of, on president, 2.4.42
  - influence of, in selecting vice president, 2.4.84
  - legal advantages not necessary for, 3.6.13
  - in presidential elections, 2.4.83
  - representation of, 2.5.22, 2.9.40 and Virginia Plan, 2.4.17
- states, recalcitrant, penalization of, 4.9.22
- states, remote, 2.8n14, 4.6.11
- states, rights of, 1.11–12, 1.35, 2.4 intro. n9
  - Brutus on, 2.4.14, 2.4.24, 2.4.33
  - inclusion of, in bill of rights, 4.6.24
  - John Francis Mercer on, 5.5.8
  - One of the Common People on, 4.8.2
- states, small, 2.4 intro.
  - Brutus on, 2.4.17, 2.4.29
  - Columbian Patriot on, 4.28.11
  - support of, for proposed Constitution, 3.6.14, 3.9.86–87, 3.14.22
  - unchanging population of, 2.4.36
- states, union of, as social contract, 2.4.29
- States-General (Netherlands), 5.1.38, 5.9.10
- State Soldier (pseud.), 5.6 intro.
- Steele, Richard, 6.8.7–10
- Steiner, Bernard, 5.2 intro. n1
- Steuben, Baron von, 4.2.8, 4.2n4, 3.9.48, 3.9n23
- Stockbridge, Massachusetts, 2.7.132
- stock jobbing, 4.3.21
- Stone, William, 6.13 intro.
- Strafford, Earl of (Thomas Wentworth), 5.1.75
- strength, bodily, cause of pre-

- strength, bodily (*continued*)
  - eminence in savage state, 2.7.107
- strength, national, importance of
  - appearance of, 6.1.37
- Strong, Caleb, 4.6n32, 4.13.6
- Stuart (Steward), House of, 6.14.124
  - banishment of, 5.16.24
  - Maryland Farmer on, 5.1.10
- succession, hereditary, 3.3.31, 3.16.4
- Suetonius, 5.1.101
- suffetes (Carthage), 2.8.178
- Suffolk County, Massachusetts, 2.8.99, 4.13.29
- suffrage
  - constitutional guarantees of, 4.26.5
  - failure of people to exercise, 6.8.30–31
  - qualifications for, 4.13.26, 6.19.17, 6.19.20
  - Republicus on, 5.13.6
  - of states in national legislature, 2.4.16, 2.4.28, 2.5.40
  - See also* franchise
- suffrage, equal, 5.16.2
- suffrage, popular, 3.11.26
- suffrage, right of
  - congressional interference with, 3.13.5, 4.18.1
  - Elbridge Gerry on, 2.1.2
  - Montesquieu on, 5.4.10
  - resignation of, by people, 5.13.13
- Sulla (Sylla), L. Cornelius, 5.1.71, 5.1.107, 5.9.2
- Sullivan, James, 4.15 intro. *See also* Cassius
- Sumpter, Thomas, vol. 5, pt. 2, intro.
- sumptuary laws, 5.1.82, 6.14.29
- superior courts, 2.8.187, 4.17.5
- superstition, 3.3.27
- supplies, requisition of, 2.5.6
- supremacy clause, 1.28, 2.7.97, 2.9.5, 3.16.16n
  - Agrippa on, 4.6.19
  - Albany Antifederal Committee on, 6.10.4
  - Cincinnatus on, 6.1.16
  - Countryman on, 6.7.9
  - Countryman from Dutchess County on, 6.6.25
  - and federal judicial power, 4.6.52
  - and federal power over states, 3.13.3
  - Federal Republican on, 3.6.32
  - Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.4
  - means of annihilating states, 4.8.1
  - Pennsylvania Convention Minority on, 3.11.22
  - Samuel on, 4.14.4
  - Sydney on, 6.9.12
  - Vox Populi on, 4.4.34
- Supreme Court, federal, 2.4.89, 4.3.9, 6.10.8
  - accountability of, for misconduct, 2.9.197
  - amendment to limit costs of suits in, 5.9.13
  - appellate jurisdiction of: Brutus on, 2.9.168–77; Cato Uticensis on, 5.7.7; Columbian Patriot on, 4.28.4; in criminal cases, 2.9.170; Federal Farmer on, 2.8.43, 2.8.45, 2.8.194; Friend to the Rights of the People on, 4.23.3(7); Luther Martin on, 2.4.58, 2.4.90; Old Whig on, 3.3.51
  - assignment of juries to, 4.17.3
  - authority of, 2.9.138
  - Brutus on, 1.50, 2.9.7, 2.9.177, 2.9.183, 2.9.193
  - Candidus on, 4.9.16, 4.9.22
  - and cases involving foreign ambassadors, 2.8.186
  - Countryman on, 6.7.1
  - expense and inconvenience of appeals to, 2.4.94, 2.8.16
  - and federal officials, 3.5.9
  - freedom of, from popular control, 2.9.196
  - Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.9
  - interpreter of Constitution, 2.7 intro., 2.7.168, 2.9.193
  - James Monroe on, 5.21.35
  - jurisdiction of, in matters of law and fact, 2.8.189, 5.6.2, 6.1.7
  - location of, 2.9.176, 2.9.177
  - original jurisdiction of, 2.7.25, 2.8.186, 2.9.168
  - Plebeian on, 6.11.32
  - possible composition of, 2.8.187
  - regulation of, by Congress, 3.3.16
  - superiority of, to every other



## Index

- Supreme Court (*continued*)  
    power in government, 2.8.184  
    and trial of facts, 3.5.8  
    in Virginia Plan, 2.4.16  
    William Symmes on, 4.5.2  
Supreme Court justices, 2.8.176  
supreme courts, state, 3.5.8, 4.15.4  
suspensive power, 5.13.14  
suspicion  
    of human nature, 2.7.112  
    political virtue of, 5.16.2  
    of representatives by people,  
        2.9.49  
Swart, Dirck, 6.10.1  
swearing, laws against, 1.85–86n49  
Sweden  
    absolutism in, 2.8.178  
    constitution of, 5.1.35  
    intrigues of foreign powers in,  
        3.8.3  
    jury trial in, 2.7.44, 3.11.40  
    revolution in, 3.8n4  
    union of executive and senate in,  
        5.1.31  
Swift, Jonathan, 3.3.32, 3.3.51  
Swiss, 5.16.8  
    Anti-Federalist praise of, 1.20  
    invasions repelled by, 5.1.47  
    patriotism of, 5.1.78  
Swiss bailiff, story of, 3.12.19n  
Swiss cantons  
    confederation sufficient for,  
        2.7.81  
    division of property in, 5.1.76  
    independence of, 4.25.3  
    troops furnished to other nations  
        by, 3.16.10  
    varying forms of government in,  
        3.3.20  
Swiss confederation, 2.4.30, 3.3.20,  
    5.1.52  
    alliance of dissimilar govern-  
        ments, 5.16.8  
    aristocratic cantons of, 5.1.28  
    enjoyment of peace by, 4.25.4  
    French attempts to influence,  
        5.1.53  
    [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.76–79  
    and standing armies, 3.5.11,  
        6.1.23  
    *See also* Helvetian League  
sword, power of, possession of, by  
    Congress, 3.11.20, 4.26.7,  
        5.16.18. *See also* purse and  
        sword, power of  
Sydney, Algernon. *See* Sidney,  
    Algernon  
Sydney (pseud.), 6.9; 1.18  
Symmes, William, 4.5; 3.9n34,  
    4.12.10  
    on presidency, 1.49  
  
tacit implication, doctrine of, 4.3.8  
Tacitus, 5.1.64, 5.1.102–3, 5.15.1  
talent  
    Anti-Federalist suspicion of, 1.17,  
        1.84n19  
    source of political power, 2.7.107  
talents, literary, 4.28.7  
Tamony (pseud.), 5.11  
Taney, Roger, 2.4 intro.  
Tarquin, 5.14.21  
tax, dry, 4.1.3  
    definition of, 4.3n16  
    John DeWitt on, 4.3.21  
    support of state governments by,  
        4.5.2  
    use of, for federal government,  
        4.28.4  
    Vox Populi on, 4.4.21  
tax assessment, 4.3.21, 4.6.40  
taxation, 2.4.56, 2.4.78  
    Aristocrotis on, 3.16.6, 3.16.17  
    during colonial period, 2.7.79,  
        5.12.2  
    congressional power over, 2.4.55,  
        2.7.52  
    equal distribution of, 2.7.169,  
        2.9.91  
    of food, drink, and clothing,  
        2.4.55  
    and legislation, 2.7.11, 2.7.96  
    Massachusetts landowners and,  
        4.4.21  
    people deprived of control over,  
        4.22.4  
    popular consent for, 2.8.86,  
        4.23.3(2)  
    power of, 1.35; Brutus on,  
        2.9.58–59; Centinel on, 2.7.40;  
        Federal Farmer on, 2.8.36,  
        2.8.76, 2.8.121, 2.8.203,  
        2.8.209; William Symmes on,  
        4.5.14  
    ruinous effects of, 4.28.1  
    self-exemption from, 4.14.4

- taxation (*continued*)  
 sovereignty and, 3.14.5, 3.14.18  
 in Virginia, 5.16.5  
 as yardstick for representation,  
 2.4.28, 2.4.30, 2.4.45  
*See also* excise; land tax; poll tax;  
 revenue  
 taxation, direct, 2.4.56, 5.4.7  
 amendment restricting, 5.17.2  
 apportionment of, 2.8.44,  
 3.6.43–44  
 called soul of government, 5.16.16  
 Consider Arms et al. on, 4.26.4  
 by federal government, 3.3.34,  
 4.6.75, 4.13.23  
 in Great Britain, 2.9.73  
 Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.6  
 [Maryland] Farmer on, 5.1.59  
 oppressive nature of, 2.9.63,  
 2.9.74  
 Patrick Henry on, 5.16.6  
 Pennsylvania Convention Minor-  
 ity on, 3.11.46  
 for raising troops, 2.8.220  
 during Revolutionary War, 2.7.79  
 in Scotland, 5.16.25  
 by states, 2.8.205, 2.8.209, 2.9.5,  
 3.6.31  
 taxation, double, 2.8.39, 2.8n29,  
 5.3.16  
 taxation, external, 2.9.63, 3.3.36  
 taxation, federal, 4.14.1, 6.13.20  
 burden of, on New England,  
 4.10.19  
 burden of, on South, 5.12.1,  
 5.12.4  
 Cato Uticensis on, 5.7.5  
 Cincinnatus on, 6.1.41–43  
 Federalist Republican on, 3.6.31  
 George Mason on, 5.17.1  
 Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.6  
 of individuals, 2.5.18  
 James Monroe on, 5.21.17, 5.21.37  
 Pennsylvania Convention Minor-  
 ity on, 3.11.47  
 power of, 3.14.11, 4.9.11, 5.2.2,  
 6.10.3; ambiguity of, 2.8.44;  
 Countryman on, 6.7.7; George  
 Clinton on, 6.13.7; limitation  
 on, 4.15.4, 5.9.7, 6.12.35–38;  
 Plebeian on, 6.11.15; and pow-  
 ers of states, 2.9.62  
 rule of, 4.13.23  
 Samuel Chase on, 5.3.13–14,  
 5.3.16  
 Sydney on, 6.9.10  
 unlimited right of: Agrippa on,  
 4.6.1; Brutus on, 2.9.88; Cen-  
 tinel on, 2.7.122; Old Whig on,  
 3.3.29; Pennsylvania Con-  
 vention Minority on, 3.11.20; Wil-  
 liam Symmes on, 4.5.9  
 taxation, internal  
 Aristocrotis on, 3.16.17  
 Brutus on, 2.9.63  
 Centinel on, 2.7.52  
 Federal Farmer on, 2.8.36,  
 2.8.209  
 Federal Republican on, 3.6.17  
 John DeWitt on, 4.3.9, 4.3.20  
 Old Whig on, 3.3.36  
 Pennsylvania House Minority on,  
 3.2.7  
 taxation, oppressive, 2.8.121, 6.2.2  
 taxation, state  
 congressional power over, 3.3.33  
 Countryman on, 6.7.7  
 Pennsylvania Convention Minor-  
 ity on, 3.11.13, 3.11.21  
 power of, 4.6.53, 6.13.7  
 suspension of, by federal govern-  
 ment, 2.8.39, 3.6.18  
 tax burden, probable effect of new  
 federal government on, 3.2.7  
 taxes  
 ability of citizens to pay, 3.9.35,  
 4.3.14  
 apportionment of: Cato on,  
 2.6.39; Consider Arms et al. on,  
 4.26.4; Farmer and Planter on,  
 5.2.3, 5.2.17; Federal Farmer  
 on, 2.8.44; Federal Republican  
 on, 3.6.43–45; Gentleman in a  
 Neighbouring State on, 4.2.3;  
 Philadelphiensis on, 3.9.85;  
 Samuel on, 4.14.1; William  
 Symmes on, 4.5.2  
 collection of: by army, 3.7.2,  
 3.16.18, 4.3.9; Federal Farmer  
 on, 2.8.205; Luther Martin on,  
 2.4.94; Patrick Henry on,  
 5.16.25–27; William Symmes  
 on, 4.5.17  
 increase of, under proposed sys-  
 tem, 5.16.27, 6.11.23  
 and industry, 2.6.40

## Index

### taxes (*continued*)

payment of, in specie, 5.12.1  
 penalties for nonpayment of, 3.9.87  
 taxing powers, concurrent. *See* taxation, double  
 tea tax, 2.7.121  
 Tell, William, 4.28.12  
 Temple, Sir William, 4.13.16, 5.1.30, 5.1n20  
 Ten Commandments, *See* Decalogue  
 tender laws, 2.9.180  
     congressional consent needed for, 4.9.22  
     destruction of mutual confidence by, 4.18.2  
     in Massachusetts, 4.6.10, 4.6.26, 6.14.29  
     possible need for, 4.5.2  
     product of weak government, 1.42  
 Ten Eyck, Anthony, 6.10.1  
 ten mile district, 4.23.3(2). *See also* federal city  
 Tenny, Samuel, 4.17 intro. n1  
 testimony, legal, 2.8.53, 2.9.177  
 test oaths, vol. 3 intro.  
 thanksgivings, legislation of, by government, 4.24.4  
 theocracy, 4.26.8, 6.6.40  
 Theocritus, 5.1.21  
 Thirty Tyrants of Athens, 3.3.51  
 Thompson, Israel, 6.10.1  
 three-fifths clause, 4.26 intro., 4.26.4, 6.12.8. *See also* slaves  
 Thucydides, 5.1.21  
 Tiberius, Emperor, 3.10.1, 5.15.1  
 Tillinghast, Charles, 2.8 intro.  
 Timothy, 6.8.32  
 titles (to property), 3.11.13  
 titles of nobility. *See* nobility, titles of  
 tobacco, 3.10.3, 4.5.2, 4.9.13  
 Todd, William, 3.11.56  
 toleration, religious, 1.22, 4.24n3  
 tonnage and poundage, 2.9.59  
 Tories, 3.9.36, 5.1.56, 5.16n2  
 torture, 2.8.105, 5.16.37  
 town meetings, 4.2.3, 5.1.113  
 towns, political advantages of, 4.10.11  
 trade  
     and agriculture, 1.45–46

decline of, 2.5.28, 2.6.40, 4.2.3  
 freedom of, 4.6.26  
 hindrances to, 2.5.15  
 regulation of: Agrippa on, 4.6.11, 4.6.24, 4.6.40, 4.6.53, 4.6.75; Albany Antifederal Committee on, 6.10.13; Brutus on, 2.9.9; Brutus, Jr., on, 6.3.10; Candidus on, 4.9.15; Centinel on, 2.7.66, 2.7.85; under Confederation, 2.6.15, 4.9.33, 4.10.16, 5.14.48; eastern states favored by, 2.8.61; and Constitutional Convention, 4.9.9; Friend of the Republic on, 4.23.5; Georgian on, 5.9.3; interstate, 2.8.35, 3.13.3, 4.6.24, 4.6.25, 5.3.10; motive for supporting new Constitution, 4.17.8; Old Whig on, 3.3.33, 3.3.36; [Pennsylvania] Farmer on, 3.14.11; Pennsylvania House Minority on, 3.2.7; Philadelphiensis on, 3.9.24; power of legislature over, 2.8.147; Rawlins Lowndes on, 5.12.1; restoration of prosperity by, 2.7.85; Robert Yates and John Lansing on, 2.3.6; Samuel Chase on, 5.3.10; Sidney on, 6.8.25; slave traffic and, 2.4.69, 4.2.9; William Symmes on, 4.5.9  
 rivalry over, 2.5.14–15  
 state governments and, 2.8.2  
 taxation of, 2.8.209, 5.3.17  
 unlimited federal power over, 4.6.62  
     *See also* commerce  
 trade, balance of, 4.6.26, 6.11.22  
 trade, foreign, 3.3.32, 3.3.36, 4.1.2  
     effect of proposed Constitution on, 4.3.4  
     evils of attachment to, 3.10.5  
     Samuel Chase on, 5.3.10  
 trade, maritime, 4.6.24, 4.6.26  
 trade connections, confederation and, 4.27.5  
 trading companies, exclusive, 4.6.63. *See also* monopolies  
 tranquillity, domestic, state governments and, 4.6.18  
 Treadwell, Thomas, 2.9 intro.

## Index

- treason, 3.5.3
  - Federal Farmer on, 2.8.186
  - judicial officers removable for, 2.9.131, 2.9.192
  - Patrick Henry accused of, 5.16.2
  - president's power to pardon, 2.2.9, 2.4.85, 2.5.41
  - resistance to tyranny construed as, 2.4.62
- treason laws, federal, 3.14.19
- treason laws, state, 3.14n11
- treasury, federal, 2.8.176, 4.14.1, 4.23.3(3)
- treasury, state, 2.9.166
- treaties, 2.3.6, 4.4.39, 5.3.17
  - Aristocrotis on, 3.16.10
  - cases arising under, 2.9.160
  - Cassius and Freeholder on, 5.20n2, 5.20n3
  - and censorship of press, 6.1.5
  - under Confederation, 2.5.9, 2.8.57, 2.8.229
  - Countryman on, 6.7.9
  - debate on, in South Carolina legislature, 5.12n1
  - effect of new plan of government on, 5.16.1
  - in Great Britain, 5.12.3
  - interference of, with existing laws, 3.11.43
  - limitation of Senate's control over, 2.5.41
  - nullification of state laws by, 2.9.5
  - possibility of their violating rights, 6.6.27
  - Rawlins Lowndes on, 5.12.1, 5.12.3
  - secret articles in, 4.5.2
  - Senate's role in, 2.9.200, 3.11.42
  - Sentiments of Many on, 5.20.3–5
  - between states, 3.1.2, 4.9.22
  - status of, in English law, 5.15.1
  - subordination of, to nation's laws, 5.12.3
  - Supreme Court and, 4.9.22
  - as supreme law, 2.7.15, 5.15.1
- treaties, commercial, 2.8.147
  - American inability to enforce observance of, 3.11.3, 5.7.4
  - under Confederation, 5.21.5
  - Plebeian on, 6.11.30
- Treatise of Civil Government* (Locke), 4.13.13
- treaty-making power, 2.1.2, 2.2.4, 2.2.10
  - exclusion of House from, 2.6.44
  - exclusion of states from, 4.5.2
  - John Francis Mercer on, 5.5.7
  - no constitutional limit on, 2.8.48
  - of old Congress, 5.14.49
  - Old Whig on, 3.3.14
  - of president and Senate, 2.9.33
  - restriction of, 3.11.1, 3.11.3, 5.4.7
- trees, fable of, 3.3.51
- trial by jury. *See* jury trial
- trials, location of
  - amendment on, 5.4.6
  - Brutus on, 2.9.27
  - Federal Farmer on, 2.8.186
  - and Maryland bill of rights, 5.3.8
  - possible effect of, on accused, 3.11.41, 4.6.21
  - Richard Henry Lee on, 5.6.3
- tribune (Roman), 2.7.36, 2.7.67, 2.8.97, 2.8.106
- trinitarian controversies, 5.1.106
- troops
  - billeting of, by Congress, 3.13.4
  - loan of, to foreign allies, 3.16.10
- troops, regular, 2.8.220. *See also* standing army
- Tudor, House of, 5.1.41
- Turgot, Anne Robert Jacques, 1.57
- Turkey, 4.22.4, 5.1.108
  - contrast of, with America, 3.9.37, 5.16.8
  - despotism of, 2.4.25, 2.7.72, 3.9.37
- Turner, Charles, 4.18; 1.23
- Tuscany, 4.25.4
- tyrannical government
  - Brutus on, 2.9.45
  - prosperity of rich under, 5.2.3
  - relative weakness of, 3.3.53
- tyrannical laws, in Virginia, 5.16.4
- tyranny
  - in ancient Rome, 4.23.3(4)
  - encouragement of, by slavery, 2.4.70
  - Federal Farmer on, 2.8.108
  - Federalist and Anti-Federalist views of, 1.39–40
  - government forced by strong on weak, 4.20.4
  - ignorance and, 3.12.7
  - John DeWitt on, 4.3.1

## Index

### tyranny (*continued*)

- John Locke on, 4.13.16
- and military spirit, 6.14.160
- Noah Webster on, 3.6n10
- prevalence of, in human society, 5.21.13
- result of executive-legislative combination, 2.5.22
- transition to, from anarchy, 5.7.4
- tyranny, aristocratic, 4.28.2, 5.14.15
- tyranny, executive, 5.1.15
- tyranny, judicial, 5.1.66
- tyranny, legislative, 5.1.15, 5.1.71
- tyranny, military, 4.11.4
- tyranny, monarchical, 5.14.15
- tyrants
  - and doctrine of tacit implication, 4.3.8
  - men of the people, 2.7.101
  - names of, used by Federalist authors, 2.8.112
  - promotion of, by wars and tumults, 2.8.178
  - and suppression of free inquiry, 2.8.3
- ultima ratio, 4.20.3, 4.20n2, 4.26.6, 6.6.54
- unanimity, rule of, for constitutional change, 2.4.10, 5.5.12
- unemployment, 3.9.48
- Union, 1.24-37, 2.3.4
  - Anti-Federalists and, 5.16n18
  - basis of American independence, 5.12n7
  - Charles Pinckney on, 1.82n40
  - consolidation of, 2.5.23, 2.5.31
  - defense of, 2.9.81
  - dissolution of, 2.5.16, 2.7 intro., 2.7.139-43
  - division of its strength, 2.5.27
  - extension of its powers, 2.8.75
  - large states a threat to, 2.4.105
  - origin of, 5.21.4
  - perpetuity of, 3.1.2
  - purposes of, 2.5 intro.
  - Richard Henry Lee's devotion to, 5.6 intro.
  - sacrifice of liberties for, 6.12.2
  - separation of dissenting states from, 4.13.17
- Union, Anglo-Scottish
  - Countryman on, 6.7.12

- Observer on, 6.4.1-3
- Patrick Henry on, 5.16.25
- terms of, 5.12.2
- union, federal
  - Aristocrotis' abhorrence of, 3.16.17n
  - Poplicola on, 4.11.1
  - state sovereignty excluded by, 3.8n1
- union, political, 5.14.2
- United States
  - asylum of liberty, 2.7.78, 2.9.2
  - Constitution's use of term, 3.13.2
  - contrast of, with Great Britain, 2.9.44, 5.14.37
  - domestic debt of, 2.9.164
  - economic independence of, 4.6.50
  - education in, 6.14.116
  - effect of party strife on, 3.9.90
  - extended territory of: Brutus on, 2.9.11, 2.9.15, 2.9.20; Cato on, 2.6.12; Columbian Patriot on, 4.28.4; Federal Farmer on, 2.8.108; George Mason on, 5.17.1; Robert Yates and John Lansing on, 2.3.7
  - financial instability of, 4.18.2
  - flourishing condition of, 4.6.40
  - frequency of political change in, 5.19.12
  - future greatness of, 3.16.16
  - future growth of, 4.2.4, 4.13.25
  - heterogeneity of, 2.6.12, 2.9.16
  - natural advantages of, 2.5.15, 6.14.3
  - north-south division of, 5.9.4
  - one government insufficient for, 2.8.14
  - Plebeian on condition of, 6.11.5-7
  - population of, 2.9.15, 3.9.27, 4.13.25
  - postwar problems of, 6.14.16
  - pro-British and pro-French factions in, 6.14.84, 6.14.91
  - protection of slave trade by, 4.26.14-15
  - recovery of, 6.12.40
  - resources of, equal to its debts, 4.6.27
  - strong government necessary for, 2.5.19
  - trade balance of, 6.11.22
  - tranquillity of, 6.3.9

- universities, 2.8.98
- usage, rights established by, 2.8.200
- usurpations, 2.8.59, 4.13.16
- usury, 4.3.2
- Utopian ideas, 2.7.160, 3.3.20
  
- Valerius (pseud.), 5.6 intro. n9
- Valerius Maximus, 3.8.5
- Valley Forge, 5.12n2
- Vane, Sir Harry, 5.1.73
- vassalage, 3.3.54, 3.16.14
- Vatican, 5.1.68
- Vattel, Emmerich von, 5.12.4, 5.12n13, 6.8.9, 6.13.16
- venality, 3.6.27
- Vendôme, duc de (Louis Joseph), 5.1.96
- vengeance, right of, 3.8n1
- Venice
  - aristocracy in, 2.7.67, 3.5.13, 4.25.3
  - aristocratic government in, 3.6.38, 4.6.60
  - constitution of, 4.6.66
  - lack of freedom in, 3.14.9
  - large assembly in, 2.8.136
  - Mercy Warren on, 6.14.123
  - religion and government in, 3.16.14
- verdicts, general, 2.8.190, 5.1.66
- Vergil, 5.1n39
- Veritas Politica (pseud.), 3.6 intro.
- Vermont, 2.4.44
  - migration to, 4.17.4
  - prospective statehood of, 2.4.106, 4.1.3, 4.17.4, 4.23.3(8)
  - separation of, from New York, 2.6.16, 6.12.3
  - suppression of conspiracy in, 4.6.8
- veto power, 2.4.16, 2.8.182
  - arguments against, 2.4.53–54
  - confused attitudes about, 3.12.17
  - Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.38
  - misuse of, 2.4.17
  - of president, 1.61, 3.12.15, 6.10.7
  - See also* negative
- vice presidency, 2.2.8, 2.6.29, 5.1.74, 5.6.5
- vice president
  - death or removal of, 2.8.181, 3.13.3
  - manipulation of apportionment by, 4.14.2
  - as president of Senate, 2.1 intro. n6, 2.4.84, 6.1.27
  - qualifications of, not specified, 2.8.45
  - selection of, 2.4.84
  - term of office, 4.14.3, 4.23.3(1)
  - vi et armis* trespasses, 2.9.157
  - vigilance, popular
    - inconstancy of, 2.8.70
    - relaxation of, 5.14.15
  - Vindiciae Galliciae*, 6.14.155
  - violence
    - alteration of Constitution by, 3.3.2
    - coercion of Pennsylvania Assembly by, 3.2.3, 3.9.75, 3.11.8, 3.14.22, 6.3.11
    - protection from, 3.9.20
    - seizure of power by, 3.3.31
  - violence, private, state governments and, 2.9.86
  - Vipperman, Carl, 5.12 intro. n3
  - Virginia, 3.1.2
    - administration of, 5.16.4
    - in Anti-Federalist strategy, vol. 5, pt. 2, intro.
    - calmness and tranquillity of, 5.16.1
    - Columbian Patriot on, 4.18.8
    - under Confederation, 5.16.12
    - decision of, on proposed Constitution, 4.13.20
    - delegation of, to Constitutional Convention, 2.8.7
    - devotion of, to liberty, 5.16.12
    - imaginary dangers threatening, 5.16.4
    - indivisibility of, 2.4.101–2
    - influence of, 2.4.45
    - John Francis Mercer's appeal to, 5.5.12
    - land value in, 3.6.45
    - liberty of conscience in, 3.12.18
    - loss of control over its own government, 5.16.5
    - place of, in balance of states, 5.9.4
    - possible expulsion of, from Union, 5.16.6
    - possible independence of, vol. 5, pt. 2, intro. n1
    - potential of, for wealth, 4.5.2
    - proponent of unequal suffrage,

Virginia (*continued*)

2.4.33  
 ratification debate in, 3.16.17, vol. 5, pt. 2, intro.  
 ratification vote in, vol. 5, pt. 2, intro.  
 representation of, 2.4.17, 2.4.45, 5.13.12, 5.16.8, 5.16.29  
 results of nonratification for, 3.9.42, 5.16.8  
 revenue of, 4.14.2  
 separation of law from equity in, 2.8.195  
 separatist tendencies in, 2.4.44  
 shipment of exports by, 5.6.4  
 Virginia constitution, 5.12.1  
 Virginia convention, 2.1 intro., 2.5 intro.  
 delay of, 4.6.12, 4.13.4  
 George Mason's speech at, 5.17  
 George Washington at, 6.6.52  
 instructions to, 4.17.10  
 John Francis Mercer and, 5.5 intro.  
 Patrick Henry's speeches at, 5.16  
 Virginia courts, 5.7.5  
 Virginia Declaration of Rights, 1.23, 1.70, 2.2 intro., 2.8n118  
*Virginia Gazette*, 5.6 intro.  
*Virginia Independent Chronicle*, 5.6 intro., 5.8, 5.11, 5.14, 5.15, 5.18–20  
*Virginia Journal*, 2.2 intro.  
 Virginia judiciary, 5.16.31  
 Virginia laws, 5.16.12–14  
 Virginia legislature, 2.5 intro., 2.8.89, 5.7.4  
 encouragement of free discussion by, 5.11.3  
 neglect of religious concerns by, 5.8.4  
 open proceedings of, 5.16.40  
 proposal of Constitutional Convention by, 3.11.3, 4.13.4  
 willingness of, to supply federal needs, 5.16.27  
 Virginia Resolutions (Virginia Plan), 2.4 intro., 2.4.14–16  
 approval of, by Constitutional Convention, 2.4.18  
 debate over, 2.4.28–35  
 Edmund Randolph on, 1.38, 2.5 intro.

Luther Martin and, 2.4n4  
 opposition to, 2.4.21, 2.4.26  
 virtue  
 of Americans, 3.3.20, 5.21.3  
 effacement of, by war, 4.17.4  
 encouragement of, by good government, 3.9.9  
 inadequacy of, as basis for government, 1.46, 1.48, 1.91–92n4, 3.6n10  
 necessity of, in republics, 4.13.21, 4.13.22, 5.3.10  
 relation of, to government, 5.8.1–2, 5.13.2  
 result of good laws, 4.1n1  
 small republics and, 1.42  
 threats to, 1.20–21  
 uncertainty of, in rulers, 1.73, 3.3.13, 3.14.22, 4.6.71, 4.26.5  
 virtue, republican, 1.72–73, 6.14.14  
 visionaries, misleading influence of, 2.4 intro. n9  
 Vitellius, 4.12.4  
 viva voce examination, 2.9.177  
 voluntary effort, unreliability of, 2.5.10  
 voting, oral, 3.16.5  
 Vox Populi (pseud.), 4.4  
 Vrooman, Peter, 6.10.1  
 Wabash Indians, 4.2.8  
 Wait, Thomas, 1.47  
 Wales, 4.6.76  
 Walpole, Sir Robert, 5.1.75  
 war, 4.3n21  
 Africans and, 4.26.15  
 under Articles of Confederation, 2.5.5–6, 4.6.59  
 combined power to declare and finance, 3.6.20, 5.16.23  
 economic effects of, 6.11.6  
 education of people in art of, 5.18.9, 5.18.12  
 Federalist and Anti-Federalist positions on, 1.30–31  
 Greek and Roman attitudes toward, 4.6.6, 4.6.49  
 lessening destructiveness of, 5.1.109, 5.1.110  
 likelihood of, 1.27  
 mobilization of resources for, 5.16.23  
 preferability of, to despotism, 2.7

- war (*continued*)
  - intro., 2.7.142
  - rational preparation for, 2.9.90
  - ruinous effects of, 4.17.4
  - success in, linked to freedom, 3.9.38
- war, articles of, 5.1.43
- war, declaration of, 2.9.124, 4.9.22
- war, defensive, 2.9.86, 4.17.4
- war, foreign, 5.12.13, 6.2.2
- war, offensive, 2.9n59
- war, religious, 5.1.76
- war, secretary at, 2.8.176
- warrants, 3.11.13, 4.3.21, 5.3.8. *See also* search warrants
- warrants, general, 2.7.1, 3.3.30, 4.28.4
  - amendment forbidding, 5.4.6
  - Aristides on, 5.1n8
  - home invasion by authority of, 5.1.13
  - in Massachusetts constitution, 4.3.22
  - in Virginia constitution, 5.16.37
  - protection against, 2.8.200
  - Son of Liberty on, 6.2.2
- Warren, Charles, 4.17n8, 6.14 intro.
  - on Columbian Patriot, 4.28 intro.
  - on Helvidius Priscus, 4.12 intro.
  - on Poplicola, 4.11 intro. n1
  - on Washington quote, 4.20n1
- Warren, James, 4.12 intro., 4.13 intro., 4.28 intro.
- Warren, Joseph, 4.3.14
- Warren, Mercy Otis, 6.14; 4.13 intro.
  - on European skepticism, 1.22
  - excerpts from *History of the Rise, Progress, and Termination of the American Revolution*, 6.14
  - on future of America, 1.76
  - identification of, as Columbian Patriot, 4.28 intro.
  - on isolationism, 1.21
  - John Adams and, 6.14n17
- Washington, George, 2.2 intro., 2.4.9
  - alleged favoritism of, 6.14.73
  - Candidus on, 4.9.15
  - Countryman from Dutchess County on, 6.6.51–52
  - dependence of, on slave labor, 4.19.3
  - fallibility of, 2.7.32, 6.8.5
  - Farewell Address of, 6.14.100, 6.14.104
  - Helvidius Priscus on, 4.12.1
  - Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.10
  - importance of, in Federalist strategy, 3.16.17
  - inconsistency of, 4.26.15
  - James Monroe and, 5.21 intro.
  - and Jay Treaty, 6.14.82, 6.14.96
  - large states and, 2.4.37
  - letter of, to George Carter, 6.6.51, 6.6.53
  - Luther Martin's appeal to, 2.7.161
  - Mercy Warren on significance of, 6.14.52–57, 6.14.102–4
  - Officer of the Late Continental Army on, 3.8.8
  - Old Whig on, 3.3.10, 3.3.31
  - One of the Four Thousand, 2.7n2
  - postwar retirement of, 6.14.61–64
  - presidency of, 6.14.72–76, 6.14.96–99, 6.14.102–4
  - proclamation of neutrality, 6.14.92
  - prostitution of his name, 2.7.5, 2.7.83, 2.7.130
  - Republican Federalist on, 4.13.10
  - restraint of, in not seizing power, 2.9.118
  - Richard Henry Lee and, 2.8 intro. n18
  - suitability of, as president, 5.12.2
  - support of, for Federalist position, 2.7.146, 4.20.2–5
  - ultima ratio regum, 3.16.19
  - warning of consequences if Constitution is rejected, 2.6n4, 4.20n1
- Watchman (*pseud.*), 4.22
- weak, protection of, 2.7.107
- wealth, 4.16.1
  - advantages of, 2.4.29
  - exodus of, from Virginia, 5.16.4
  - relation of, to power, 2.7.107, 5.1.26, 5.3.20
  - threat to liberty, 5.14.15
- wealth, commercial, 3.6.45
- wealthy men
  - ability of, to buy support, 5.5.1
  - advantages of, in elections, 2.9.52, 6.12.17
  - Brutus on, 2.9.11, 2.9.52



## Index

- wealthy men (*continued*)
  - imitation of, by lower classes, 4.16.1
  - necessity of, to strong government, 3.9.22
  - prosperity of, under tyranny, 5.2.3
  - punishment of, for crime, 5.1.94
  - relation of, to government, 2.4.30
  - support of, for Constitution, 5.2.2
  - support of, for Revolution, 5.2.4
  - See also* wellborn
- Webster, Noah, 2.9.77, 3.6n10
  - American Museum*, 2.8 intro.
  - on appeals to federal courts, 3.5n6
  - Citizen of America, 2.9.107, 4.4n1
  - on freedom of press, 3.11n6
  - on game laws, 3.11n7
  - on integrity of Framers, 3.6n4
  - on novelty of representation, 1.91n31
  - reply of, to [Pennsylvania] Farmer, 3.11 intro. n1
  - on scope of representation, 1.45
  - on Senate, 1.96n31
  - on trial of vicinage, 1.85n27
- Webster, Pelatiah, 2.9n1
  - Countryman on, 6.6.48
  - reply of, to Pennsylvania House Minority, 3.2 intro., 3.2n5
  - on three-branch legislature, 1.96n42
- weights and measures, 2.4.70, 2.8.10, 2.8.35, 5.3.10
- wellborn
  - attempts of, against freedom of press, 3.9.3, 3.9.51
  - authors of federal Constitution, 3.7.2
  - Centinel on, 2.7.129
  - inconveniences to, 3.4.1
  - real interest of, in proposed Constitution, 3.9.88
- Wentworth, Thomas (Earl of Stratford), 2.7.112, 5.1.75
- West, Benjamin, 3.8.5
- western land, sale of, by federal government
  - Agrippa on, 4.6.27, 4.6.77
  - Brutus on, 2.9.89
  - Brutus, Jr., on, 6.3.10
  - Centinel on, 2.7.53
  - Cincinnatus on, 6.1.47
  - Gentleman in a Neighbouring State on, 4.2.6
  - Pennsylvania Convention Minority on, 3.11.2
- western territories
  - British posts in, 6.11.30
  - extent and fertility of, 3.10.3
  - jury system established in, 2.8.193
  - Mercy Warren on, 6.14.87
  - subjection of, to eastern states, 2.4.102
  - trade contacts of, with east, 4.6.32
  - troops needed to guard, 5.1.46
  - won by efforts of all states, 2.4.107
- West Indies, 2.7.87, 4.6.25, 4.6.46
- West Point, 2.8.223
- wheat, 3.10.3, 4.5.2
- Whig, Old. *See* Old Whig
- Whigs, 2.6.31, 4.2.3
- Whigs, Real, 1.39
- Whigs of 1776, One of the (pseud.), 3.9.52
- Whiskey Rebellion, 6.14.96
- Whitehill, John, 3.11.56
- Whitehill, Robert, 1.15, 2.7.158, vol. 3 intro.
  - Helvidius Priscus on, 4.12.10
  - Pennsylvania convention, 3.1 intro., 3.9.32; Minority of, 3.11.56
- William III of England (Prince of Orange), 3.12.15, 5.1.6, 5.16.24
- and Mary, 3.3.23, 5.12.3
- William and Mary College, 5.1 intro.
- Williams, David, 6.14.7
- Williams, John, 2.6 intro., 5.1.35, 5.1.37, 6.12.35
- Williams, William, 4.24n1
- Wilson, James, 1.9, 1.16, 1.55, 6.13n9
  - agreement of, with Republican Federalist, 4.13n6
  - ambition of, to be chief justice, 2.7.159, 2.7n85
  - on Amphictyonic council, 4.12.1
  - aristocratic sentiments of, 3.8.5
  - Aristocrotis on, 3.16.1
  - attempt of, to discredit Anti-Federalists, 4.13.21
  - on bill of rights, 2.9n17, 4.17n9
  - burning of, in effigy, 4.13.27
  - "Caledonian," 2.7.136, 2.7.167

Wilson, James (*continued*)

Candidus on, 4.9.20  
 Centinel on, 2.7 intro., 2.7.35–59,  
 2.7.127, 2.7.136, 2.7.158  
 Cincinnatus's reply to, 6.1  
 on Congress as representative of  
 people, 3.3.16  
 on congressional power over  
 elections, 2.7.100  
 on consolidation, 4.13.10  
 on constitutional protection for  
 states, 2.7.99  
 convention speech of, 2.4n5  
 defense of federalism by, 1.11  
 delegate to Constitutional Con-  
 vention, 3.2.5  
 on demagoguery, 1.44  
 Democratic Federalist's reply to,  
 3.5  
 description of proposed govern-  
 ment by, 4.28.4  
 desire of, for federal office, 6.1.51  
 on distinction between federal and  
 state constitutions, 4.17.2  
 on distinction between state and  
 continental governments,  
 4.6.69  
 on electoral functions of state  
 legislatures, 3.11n13  
 Federalist propaganda, 2.7 intro.  
 Federal Republican on, 3.6.7  
 on Framers' desire to preserve  
 state governments, 1.81n29  
 and Freeman essays, 3.13 intro.  
 n1  
 Friend to the Republic's reply to,  
 4.23.6  
 Impartial Examiner on, 5.14.5,  
 5.14n6  
 on implied powers, 4.3.8, 4.3n8  
 influence of Patrick Henry on,  
 5.16 intro.  
 John DeWitt on, 4.3.16  
 on jury trial provision, 4.15.7  
 on large republics, 3.11.17  
 on liberties in Federal City, 6.1n9  
 on mixed government, 1.62  
 on nature of federal republics,  
 3.14n4  
 [New Hampshire] Farmer on,  
 4.17.14  
 Officer of the Late Continental  
 Army on, 3.8 intro., 3.8.3, 3.8.5

Old Whig's reply to, 3.3.6–16  
 partiality of, 6.1.36  
 at Pennsylvania convention, 2.7  
 intro., 2.7.94, 2.7.162, vol. 3  
 intro. n2  
 on priority of Union over states,  
 1.12  
 refutation of George Mason by,  
 2.2 intro.  
 reply to, by Helvidius Priscus,  
 4.12.1–4  
 on responsibility of citizenry, 1.72  
 on science of government,  
 4.28n17  
 signer of new Constitution,  
 2.8.196, 2.8n117  
 speech of, on freedom of press,  
 4.8n4  
 on standing armies, 2.9n73,  
 3.5.12, 4.3.29, 4.28.4, 6.1.37,  
 6.1n10  
 State house speech of, 1.65, 2.2  
 intro.  
 suggestion of name "federal re-  
 public," 1.55  
 support of, by a claque, 4.6.47,  
 4.6.57  
 support of Constitution by,  
 2.7n14, 6.7.12  
 on suppression of state govern-  
 ments, 4.13n4  
 on western expansion of U.S.,  
 4.9.31  
 Winthrop, James, 4.6 intro.  
 Winthrop, John, 4.6 intro.  
 witchcraft, 3.3.26, 4.24n1  
 witnesses  
 confrontation of accused by,  
 2.8.200, 2.9.27, 5.14.10  
 cross-examination of, 2.8.53,  
 2.9.177  
 open examination of, 6.1.19  
 presence of, in court, 2.9.177  
 transportation of, across state  
 lines, 4.6.21  
 Wood, Gordon, 1.4, 1.40, 1.83n7,  
 1.91n39, 1.91n41, 2.8 intro.  
 Woodfall, Henry, 6.1.8  
 Worcester, Massachusetts, 4.13.29,  
 6.14.30  
 Worcester County, Maryland,  
 5.4.3  
 Worcester Magazine, 4.22

# Index

- Workman, Benjamin, 2.7 intro.,  
2.7.177, 3.9 intro.
- Worthington, Brice, 5.2n1
- writs of assistance, 4.28.4
- written instruments, duties on,  
2.9.59, 2.9.63
- Wythe, George, 5.19 intro.
- Ximénes de Cisneros, Francisco.  
*See* Jiménez de Cisneros, Francisco
- Yates, Abraham, 2.6 intro., 2.9  
intro., 6.8 intro., 6.9 intro.
- Yates, Robert, 2.3; 2.4.1, 2.4.37, 2.9  
intro., vol. 6 intro., 6.9 intro.,  
6.10.1  
coauthor of *Reasons of Dissent*,  
2.3
- yeomanry, 4.3.28, 5.1.58, 5.1.72  
Anti-Federalists on, 1.18  
characteristics of, 2.8.98, 5.1.81  
opposition of, to proposed Con-  
stitution, 4.13.27  
representation of, 2.8.39, 2.9.42  
virtues of, 6.12.17  
*See also* middle class
- Yeomanry of Massachusetts  
(pseud.), 4.19
- youth, 4.17n8, 4.18.2, 5.8.4
- Zenger, John Peter, 3.5.4, 6.1.7

